



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

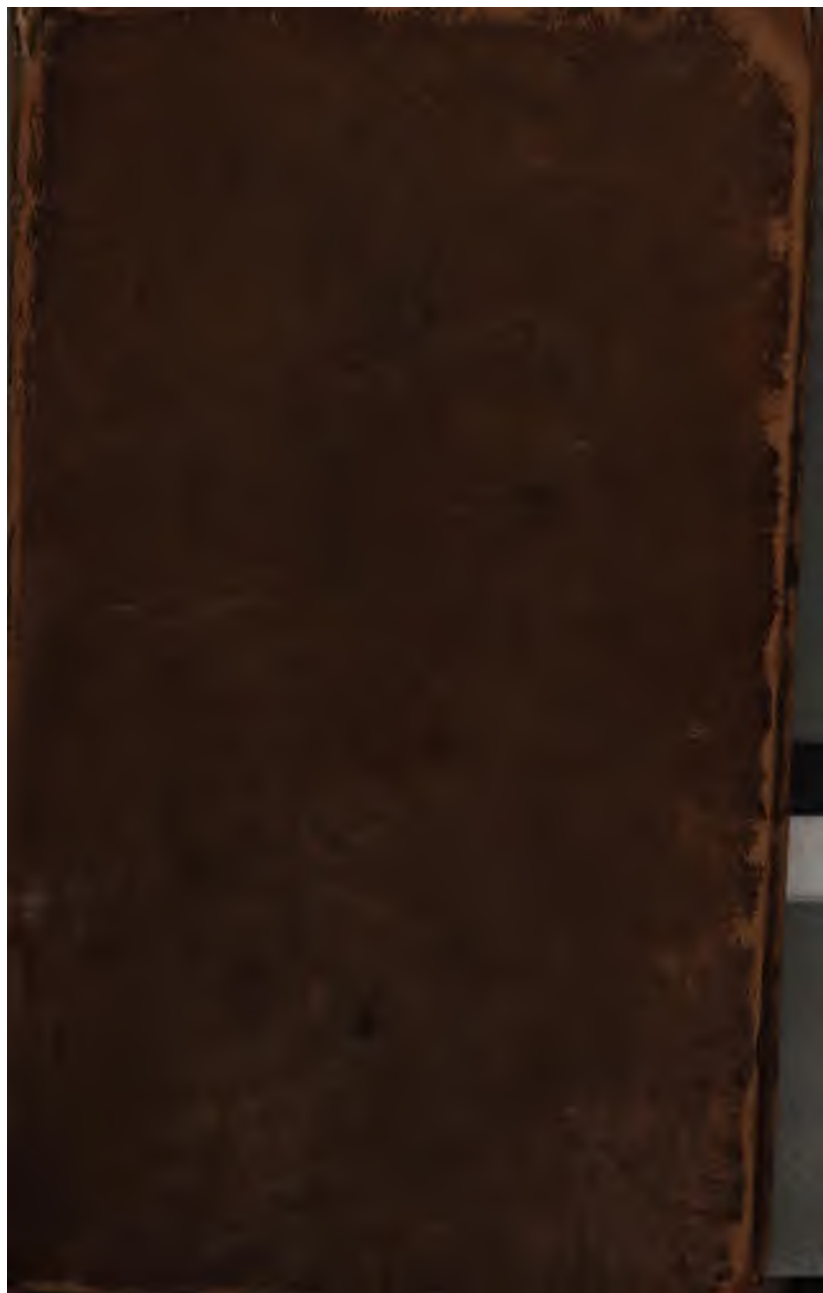
Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>



16

63









PARADISE LOST.

Revised A *Dunlop*

P O E M.

IN

TWELVE BOOKS,

BY

J O H N M I L T O N.

WITH A.

BIOGRAPHICAL AND CRITICAL ACCOUNT

OF THE

AUTHOR AND HIS WRITINGS.



KILMARNOCK:

PRINTED BY J. WILSON.

M, BCC, LXXIX.

280. n. 785.

1896
1897
1898
1899
1900
1901
1902
1903
1904
1905
1906
1907
1908
1909
1910
1911
1912
1913
1914
1915
1916
1917
1918
1919
1920
1921
1922
1923
1924
1925
1926
1927
1928
1929
1930
1931
1932
1933
1934
1935
1936
1937
1938
1939
1940
1941
1942
1943
1944
1945
1946
1947
1948
1949
1950
1951
1952
1953
1954
1955
1956
1957
1958
1959
1960
1961
1962
1963
1964
1965
1966
1967
1968
1969
1970
1971
1972
1973
1974
1975
1976
1977
1978
1979
1980
1981
1982
1983
1984
1985
1986
1987
1988
1989
1990
1991
1992
1993
1994
1995
1996
1997
1998
1999
2000
2001
2002
2003
2004
2005
2006
2007
2008
2009
2010
2011
2012
2013
2014
2015
2016
2017
2018
2019
2020
2021
2022
2023
2024
2025
2026
2027
2028
2029
2030



THE
L I F E
O F
J O H N M I L T O N.

FROM a family and town of his name in Oxfordshire our Author derived his descent ; but he was born at London in the year 1608. The publisher * of his works in prose (on whose veracity some part of this narrative must entirely depend) dates his birth two years earlier than this : but contradicting himself afterwards in his own computation, I reduce it to the time that Monsieur Bayle hath assigned ; and for the same reason which prevailed with him to assign it. His father John Milton, by profession a scrivener, lived in a reputable manner on a competent estate, entirely his own acquisition, having been early disinherited by his parents for renouncing the communion of the church of Rome, to which they were zealously devoted. By his wife Sarah Caston he had likewise one daughter, named Anna, and another son, Christopher, whom he trained to the practice of the common law, who in the great rebellion adhered to the royal cause ; and in the reign of King James II. by too easy a compliance with the doctrines of the court, both religious and civil, he attained to the dignity of being made a judge of the common pleas ; of which he died divested not long after the Revolution.

But John, the subject of the present Essay, was the favourite of his father's hopes, who, to cultivate the

* Mr. Toland.

great genius which early displayed itself, was at the expence of a domestic tutor; whose care and capacity

his pupil hath gratefully celebrated in *An. etat. 12.* an excellent Latin elegy*. At his i-

nitiation he is said to have applied himself to letters with such indefatigable industry, that he rarely was prevailed with to quit his studies before midnight; which not only made him frequently subject to severe pains in his head, but likewise occasioned that weakness in his eyes, which terminated in a total privation of sight. From a domestic education he was removed to St. Paul's school, to complete his acquaintance with the classics under the care of Dr. Gill; and

after a short stay there, was transplanted to Christ's College in Cambridge, where he distinguished himself in all kinds of academical exercises. Of this society he continued a member till he commenced master of arts; and then, leaving the university, he re-

turned to his father, who had quitted the town, and lived at Hornton in Buckinghamshire, where he pursued his studies with unparalleled assiduity and success.

After some months spent in this studious retirement his mother died, and then he prevailed with his father to gratify an inclination he had long entertained of seeing foreign countries. Sir Henry

An. etat. 30. Wotton, at that time provost of Eaton college, gave him a letter of advice for the direction of his travels; but not observing an excellent maxim in it†, he incurred great danger, by disputing against the superstition of the church of Rome, within the verge of the vatican. Having employed his curiosity about two years‡ in France and

* See the fourth in his collection of poems.

† *I pensieri stretti, ed il viso sciolto.*

‡ *Et jam bis viridi surgebat cœtus arista,
Et totidem flavas numerabant borrea messes.—
Nec dum aderat Thrysis; pastorem scilicet illum
Dulcis amor Musæ Thusca ritinebat in urbe.*

Epitaph, Dam.

Italy, on the news of a civil war breaking out in England, he returned without taking a survey of Greece and Sicily, as at his setting out the scheme was projected. At Paris * the Lord Viscount Scudamore, ambassador from King Charles I. at the court of France, introduced him to the acquaintance of Grotius, who at that time was honoured with the same character there by Christina, queen of Sweden. In Rome, Genoa, Florence, and other cities of Italy, he contracted a familiarity with those who were of highest reputation for wit and learning, several of whom gave him very obliging testimonies of their friendship and esteem, which are printed before his Latin poems. The first of them was written by Manso, marquis of Villa, a great patron of Tasso, by whom he is celebrated in his poem on the conquest of Jerusalem†. It is highly probable that to his conversation with this noble Neopolitan we owe the first design which MILTON conceived, of writing an epic poem; and it appears by some Latin verses addressed to the Marquis, with the title of *Mansus*, that he intended to fix on King Arthur for his hero; but Arthur was reserved for another destiny.

Returning from his travels he found England on the point of being involved *An. atat. 32.* in blood and confusion. It seems wonderful, that one of so warm and daring a spirit, as his certainly was, should be restrained from the camp in those unnatural commotions. I suppose we may impute it wholly to the great deference he paid to paternal authority, that he retired to lodgings provided for him in the city; which being commodious for the reception of his sister's sons, and some other young gentlemen, he undertook their education, and is said to have formed them on the same plan which he afterwards published, in a short tractate, inscribed to his friend Mr. Hartlib.

In this philosophical course he continued without a

* *Defensio secunda.* Page 96. fol.

† *Fra Cavalier, magnanimi, e cortesi,*
Resplende il Manso.—

THE LIFE OF

... when he mar-
ried the daughter of Richard
... in Gloucestershire,
... in that country, an
... the
... more than a month
... Herde
... con
... and al
... with ar
... I
... of b
... him, in
... soccol
... little e
... and perhaps of
... contribute
... in Pers
... Adam
... the gen
... the state

...
...
...

... remain
... which he b
... the king
... when
... frequent
... to more
... the
... in a
... by his polem
... and in
... there w
... polem

...

in the state. It is in vain to dissemble, and far be it from me to defend his engaging with a party combined in the destruction of our church and monarchy. Yet, leaving the justification of a misguided sincerity to be debated in the schools, may I presume to observe in his favour, that his zeal, distempered and furious as it was, does not appear to have been inspirited by self-interested views. For it is affirmed, that though he lived always in a frugal retirement, and before his death had disposed of his library (which we may suppose to have been a valuable collection), he left not more than fifteen hundred pounds behind him for the support of his family; and whoever considers the posts to which he was advanced, and the times in which he enjoyed them, will, I believe, confess he might have accumulated a much more plentiful fortune. In a dispassionate mind it will not require any extraordinary measure of candour to conclude, that though he abode in the heritage of oppressors, and the spoils of his country lay at his feet, neither his conscience nor his honour could stoop to gather them.

A commission to constitute him adjutant-general to Sir William Waller *An. atat. 42.* was promised, but soon superseded by Waller's being laid aside, when his masters thought it proper to new model their army. However, the keenness of his pen had so effectually recommended him to Cromwell's esteem, that when he took the reins of government into his own hand, he advanced him to be Latin secretary, both to himself and the parliament; the former of these preferments he enjoyed both under the usurper and his son, the other till King Charles II. was restored. For some time he had an apartment for his family at Whitehall; but his health requiring a freer accession of air, he was obliged to remove from thence to lodgings which opened into St. James's park. Not long after his settlement there, his wife died in child-bed; and much about the time of her death, a gutta serena, which had for several years been gradually increasing, totally extinguished *his sight.* In this melancholic condition he was easily

prevailed with to think of taking another wife, who was Catherine, the daughter of Captain Woodcock of Hackney; and she too, in less than a year after their marriage, died in the same unfortunate manner as the former had done; and in his twenty-third sonnet he does honour to her memory.

These private calamities were much heightened by the different figure he was likely to make *An. etat. 52.* in the new scene of affairs which was going to be acted in the state. For all things now conspiring to promote the king's restoration, he was too conscious of his own inactivity during the usurpation to expect any favour from the crown; and therefore he prudently absconded till the act of oblivion was published, by which he was only rendered incapable of bearing any office in the nation. Many had a very just esteem of his admirable parts and learning, who detested his principles, by whose intercession his pardon passed the seals; and I wish the laws of civil history could have extended the benefit of that oblivion to the memory of his guilt, which was indulged to his person; *ne tanti facinoris inhumanitas extitisse, aut non vindicato fuisse, videatur.*

Having thus gained a full protection from the government (which was in truth more than he could have reasonably hoped) he appeared as much in public as he formerly used to do; and employing his friend Dr. Paget to make choice of a third consort, on his recommendation he married Elizabeth, the daughter of Mr. Minshul, a Cheshire gentleman, by whom he had no issue. Three daughters by his first wife were then living, the two elder of whom are said to have been very serviceable to him in his studies: for having been instructed to pronounce not only the modern, but also the Latin, Greek, and Hebrew languages, they read in their respective originals whatever authors he wanted to consult, tho' they understood none but their mother tongue. This employment, however, was too unpleasant to be continued for any long process of time; and therefore he dismissed them to receive an education more agreeable to their sex and temper.

We come now to take a survey of him in that point of view, in which he will be looked upon by all succeeding ages with equal delight and admiration. An interval of about twenty years had elapsed since he wrote the mask of *Comus* *, *L'Allegro, Il Penferoso*, and *Lycidas* †, all in such an exquisite strain, that though he had left no other monument of his genius behind him, his name had been immortal; but neither the infirmities of age and constitution, nor the vicissitudes of fortune, could depress the vigour of his mind, or divert it from executing a design he had long conceived, of writing an heroic poem *. The fall of man was a subject that he had some years before fixed on for a tragedy, which he intended to form by the models of antiquity: and some, not without probability, say, the play opened with that speech in the fourth book of *Paradise Lost*, l. 32. which is addressed by Satan to the sun. Were it material, I believe I could produce other passages which more plainly appear to have been originally intended for the scene: but whatever truth there may be in this report, it is certain that he did not begin to mould his subject in the form which it bears now, before he had concluded his controversy with *Salmasius* and *More*, when he had wholly lost the use of his eyes, and was forced to employ, in the office of an amanuensis, any friend who accidentally paid him a visit. Yet, under all these discouragements, and various interruptions, in the year 1669 †, he published his *Paradise Lost*, the noblest poem (next *An. atat.* 61. to those of *Homer* and *Virgil*) that ever the wit of man produced in any age or nation. Need I mention any other evidence of its inestimable worth, than the finest geniuses who have succeeded him; have ever esteemed it a merit to relish and illustrate its beauties? whilst the critic who gazed, with so much wanton malice, on the nakedness of Shake-

* *Paradise Lost*, Book IX. l. 26.

† *Milton's contract* with his bookseller, S. Simmons, for the copy, bears date April 27th, 1667.

speare when he slept, after having formally declared war against it*, wanted courage to make his attack; flushed though he was with conquests over Julius Cæsar, and the Moor, which insolence his muse, like the other assassins of Cæsar, severely revenged on herself; and not long after her triumph became her own executioner. Nor is it unworthy our observation, that though perhaps not one of our English poets have excited so many admirers to imitate his manner, yet I think never any was known to aspire to emulation; even the late ingenious Mr. Philips, who, in the colours of style, came the nearest of all the copiers to resemble the great original, made his distant advances with a filial reverence, and restrained ambition within the same bounds which Lucretius prescribed to his own imitation.

*Non ita certandi cupidus, quam propter amorem
Quod TE imitari aveau: quid enim contendat hirundo
Cycnis?—*

And now perhaps it may pass for fiction, what with great veracity I affirm to be fact, that MILTON, after having with much difficulty prevailed to have this divine poem licensed for the press, could sell the copy for 1.0 more than fifteen pounds, the payment of which valuable consideration depended upon the sale of three numerous impressions. So unreasonable may personal prejudice affect the most excellent performances.

About two years after †, together *An. etat. 63.* with *Samson Agonistes*, (a tragedy not unworthy the Grecian stage when Athens was in her glory) he published *Paradise Regained*; but, *oh! what a falling off was there!*—of which I will say no more, than that there is scarcely a more remarkable instance of the frailty of human reason than our author gave, in preferring this poem to *Paradise Lost*, nor a more instructive caution to the best

* The tragedies of the last age considered, page 145.

† *Vide* Edgar.

They were licensed July 2, 1670, but not printed before the ensuing.

writers, to be very diffident in deciding the merit of their own productions.

And thus having attended him to the sixty-sixth year of his age, as closely as such imperfect lights as men of letters and retirement usually leave to guide our inquiry would allow, it now only remains to be recorded, that in the year 1674, the gout put a period to his life, at Bunhill near London; from whence his body was conveyed to St. Giles' church by Cripple gate, where it lies interred in the Chancel; but neither has nor wants a monument to perpetuate his memory.

In his youth he is said to have been extremely handsome; the colour of his hair was a light brown, the symmetry of his features exact, enlivened with an agreeable air, and a beautiful mixture of fair and ruddy; which occasioned the Marquis of Villa to give his epigram the same turn of thought*, which Gregory archdeacon of Rome had employed about a thousand years before, in praising the amiable complexions of some English youths, before their conversion to christianity. His stature † (as we find it measured by himself) did not exceed the middle size, neither too lean, nor corpulent; his limbs well proportioned, nervous, and active, serviceable in all respects to his exercising the sword, in which he much delighted; and wanted neither skill, nor courage, to resent an affront from men of the most athletic constitutions. In his diet he was abstemious; not delicate in the choice of his dishes; and strong liquors of all kinds were his aversion. Being too sadly convinced how much his health had suffered by night-studies in his younger years, he used to go early (seldom later than nine) to rest, and rose commonly before five in the morning. It is reported, (and there is a passage in one of his Latin elegies to countenance the tradition), that his fancy made the happiest flights in the spring: but one

* *Ut mens, forma, decus, facies, mors, si pietas sic,
Non Anglus, verum hercle angelus ipse foret.*
† *Defensio secunda, p. 87 fol.*

of his nephews used to deliver it as MILTON's own observation, that his invention was in its highest perfection from September to the vernal equinox: however it was, the great inequalities to be found in his compositions are incontestable proofs, that in some seasons he was but one of the people. When blindness restrained him from other exercises, he had a machine to swing in for the preservation of his health, and diverted himself in his chamber with playing on an organ. His deportment was erect, open, affable; his conversation easy, cheerful, instructive; his wit on all occasions at command, facetious, grave, or satirical, as the subject required. His judgement, when disengaged from religious and political speculations, was just and penetrating; his apprehension quick, his memory tenacious of what he read, his reading only not so extensive as his genius, for this was universal. And having treasured up such immense store of science, perhaps the faculties of his soul grew more vigorous after he was deprived of sight; and his imagination, (naturally sublime and enlarged by reading romances*, of which he was much enamoured in his youth), when it was wholly abstracted from material objects, was more at liberty to make such amazing excursions into the ideal world, when in composing his divine work he was tempted to range

Beyond the visible diurnal sphere.

With so many accomplishments, not to have had some faults and misfortunes to be laid in the balance with the fame and felicity of writing *Paradise Lost*, would have been too great a portion for humanity

ELIJAH FENTON.

* His apology for *Smectymnus*, p. 177. fol.

PARADISUM AMISSAM

SUMMI POETAE

JOANNIS MILTONI.

QUI legis AMMISSAM PARADISUM, grandia magni
 Carmina MILTONI, quid nisi cuncta legis?
 Res cunctas, et cunctarum primordia rerum,
 Et fata, et fines continet iste liber.
 Intima panduntur magni penetralia mundi,
 Scribitur et toto quicquid in orbe latet:
 Terræque, tractusque maris, cælumque profundum,
 Sulphuremque Erebi, flammivomusque specus:
 Quæque colunt terras, pontumque, et Tartara cæca.
 Quæque colunt summi lucida regna poli:
 Et quodcunque ullis conclusum est finibus usquam,
 Et sine fine Chaos, et sine fine DEVS:
 Et sine fine magis, si quid magis est sine fine,
 In CHRISTO ergo homines conciliatus amor.
 Hæc qui speraret quis crederet esse futura?
 Et tamen hæc hodie terra Britanno legit.
 O quantos in bella duces: quæ protulit arma!
 Quæ canit, et quanta proelia dira tuba!
 Cœlestis acies! atque in certamine cælum!
 Et que cœlestes pugnae deceret agros!
 Quantus in æthereis tollit se Lucifer armis!
 Atque ipso graditur vix Michaelis minor!

That majesty which through thy work doth reign,
 Draws the devout, deterring the profane ;
 And things divine thou treat'st of in such state
 As them preserves, and thee, inviolate.
 At once delight and horror on us seize,
 Thou sing'st with so much gravity and ease ;
 And above human flight dost soar aloft,
 With plume so strong, so equal, and so soft :
 The bird nam'd from that Paradise you sing
 So never flags, but always keeps on wing.

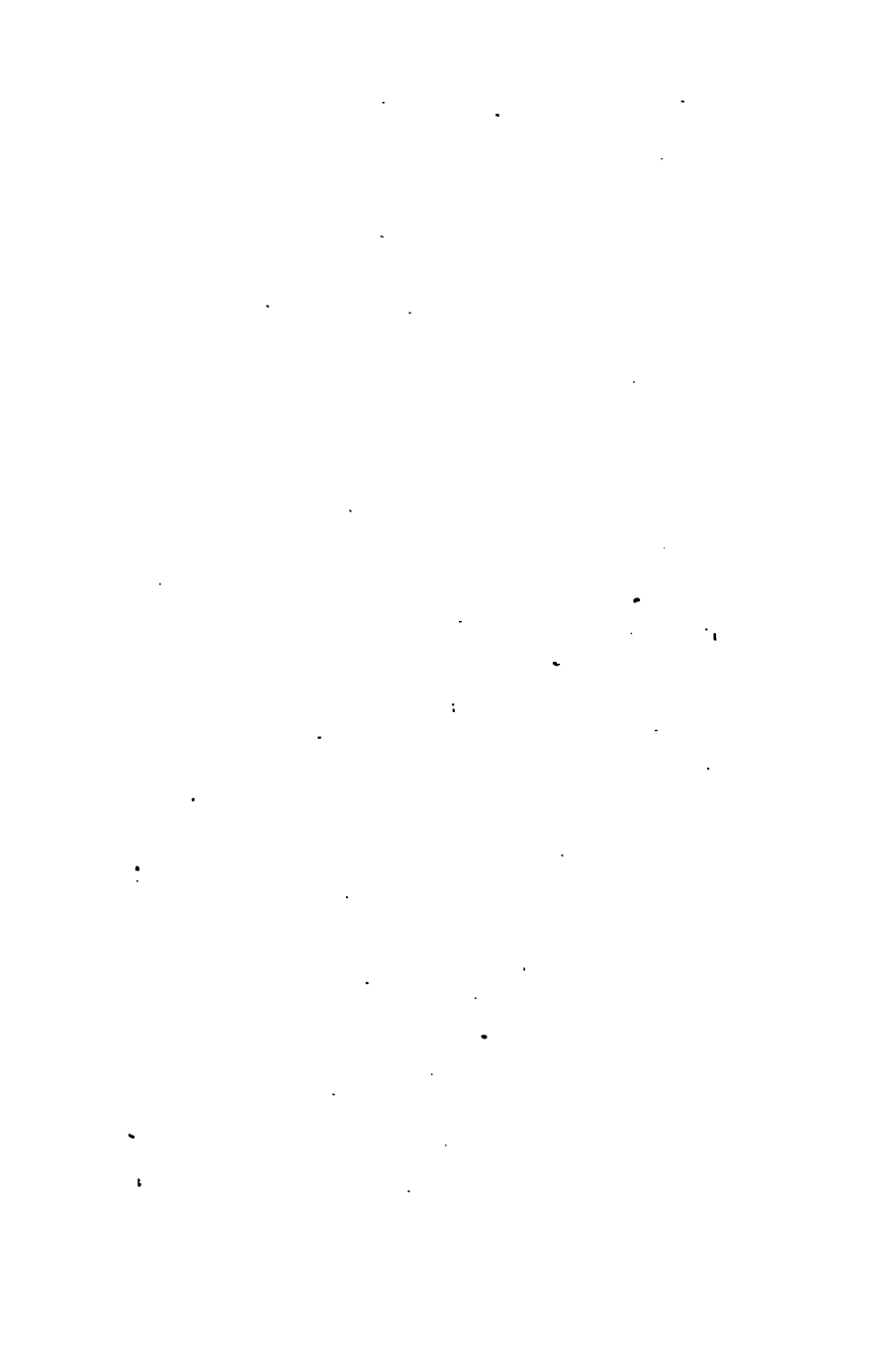
Where could'st thou words of such a compass find ?
 Whence furnish such a vast expanse of mind ?
 Just Heav'n thee, like Tiresias, to requite,
 Rewards with prophecy thy loss of sight.

Well might'st thou scorn thy readers to allure
 With tinkling rhyme, of thy own sense secure ;
 While the town-boy writes all the while and spells,
 And, like a pack-horse, tires without his bells :
 Their fancies like our bushy points appear,
 The poets tag them, we for fashion wear.
 I too transported by the mode offend ;
 And while I mean to praise thee, must commend.
 Thy verse created like thy theme sublime,
 In number, weight, and measure, needs not rhyme.

ANDREW MARVEL.

T H E V E R S E .

THE measure is English heroic verse without rhyme, as that of Homer in Greek, and of Virgil in Latin; rhyme being no necessary adjunct or true ornament of poem or good verse, in longer works especially, but the invention of a barbarous age, to set off wretched matter and metre; graced indeed since by the use of some famous modern poets, carried away by custom; but much to their own vexation, hinderance, and constraint, to express many things otherwise, and, for the most part, worse than else they would have expressed them. Not without cause, therefore, some, both Italian and Spanish poets, of prime note, have rejected rhyme, both in longer and shorter works, as have also long since our best English tragedies, as a thing of itself, to all judicious ears, trivial, and of no true musical delight; which consists only in apt numbers, fit quantity of syllables, and the sense variously drawn out from one verse into another; not in the jingling sound of like endings, a fault avoided by the learned Ancients both in poetry and all good oratory. This neglect then of rhyme so little is to be taken for a defect, though it may seem so perhaps to vulgar readers, that it rather is to be esteemed an example set, the first in English, of ancient liberty recovered to heroic poem, from the troublesome and modern bondage of rhyming.



PARADISE LOST.

B O O K I.

THE ARGUMENT.

This book proposes, first, in brief, the whole subject, Man's disobedience, and the loss thereupon of Paradise wherein he was placed: Then touches the prime cause of his fall, the Serpent, or rather Satan in the Serpent; who revolting from God, and drawing to his side many legions of Angels, was by the command of God driven out of heaven with all his crew into the great deep. Which action passed over, the poem hastes into the midst of things, presenting Satan with his angels now fallen into hell, described here, not in the centre (for Heaven and Earth may be supposed as yet not made, certainly not yet accursed), but in a place of utter darkness, fitliest called Chaos: Here Satan with his Angels lying on the burning lake, thunder struck and astonished, after a certain space recovers, as from confusion, calls up him who next in order and dignity lay by him: they confer of their miserable fall. Satan awakes his legions, who lay till then in the same manner confounded: They rise, their numbers, array of battle, their chief leaders named, according to the idols known afterwards in Canaan and the countries adjoining. To these Satan directs his speech, comforts them with hope yet of regaining Heaven, but tells them lastly of a new world and a new kind of creature to be created, according to an ancient prophecy or report in heaven; for that Angels were long before this visible creation was the opinion of many ancient Fathers. To find out the truth of this prophecy, and what to determine thereon, he refers to a full council. What his associates thence attempt. Pandemonium, the palace of Satan, rises, suddenly built out of the deep: the infernal peers there sit in council.

OF man's first disobedience, and the fruit
Of that forbidden tree, whose mortal taste
Brought death into the world, and all our woe,

With loss of Eden, till one greater Man
 Restore us and regain the blissful seat, 5
 Sing, heav'nly Muse, that on the secret top
 Of Oreb, or of Sinai, didst inspire
 That shepherd who first taught the chosen seed,
 In the beginning how the heavens and earth
 Rose out of Chaos; or if Sion hill 10
 Delight thee more, and Siloa's brook that flow'd
 Fast by the oracle of God; I thence
 Invoke thy aid to my advent'rous song,
 That with no middle flight intends to soar
 Above the Aonian mount; while it pursues 15
 Things unattempted yet in prose or rhyme.
 And chiefly thou, O Sp'rit, that dost prefer
 Before all temples th' upright heart and pure,
 Instruct me, for thou know'st; thou from the first
 Wast present; and with mighty wings outspread, 20
 Dove-like, satt'st brooding on the vast abyss,
 And mad'st it pregnant: what in me is dark,
 Illumine: what is lost, raise and support;
 That to the height of this great argument
 I may assert eternal providence, 25
 And justify the ways of God to man.
 Say first, for heav'n hides nothing from thy view,
 Nor the deep tract of hell: say first what cause
 Mov'd our grand parents in that happy state,
 Favour'd of heav'n so highly, to fall off 30
 From their Creator, and transgress his will,
 For one restraint, lords of the world besides?
 Who first seduc'd them to that foul revolt?
 Th' infernal serpent; he it was, whose guile,
 Stirr'd up with envy and revenge, deceiv'd 35
 The mother of mankind, what time his pride
 Had cast him out from heav'n, with all his host
 Of rebel angels; by whose aid aspiring
 To set himself in glory 'bove his peers,
 He trusted to have equall'd the Most High, 40
 If he oppos'd; and with ambitious aim
 Against the throne and monarchy of God
 Rais'd impious war in heav'n and battle proud,
 With vain attempt. Him the Almighty power

Hurl'd headlong flaming from th' etherial sky, 45
 With hideous ruin and combustion, down
 To bottomless perdition, there to dwell
 In adamantinè chains and penal fire,
 Who durst defy the Omnipotent to arms.
 Nine times the space that measures day and night 50
 To mortal men, he with his hórrid crew
 Lay vanquish'd rolling in the fiery gulf,
 Confounded though immortal: but his doom
 Reserv'd him to more wrath; for now the thought
 Both of lost happiness and lasting pain 55
 Torments him. Round he throws his baleful eyes,
 That witness'd hugè affliction and dismay
 Mix'd with obdurate pride and stedfast hate:
 At once, as far as angels ken, he views
 The dismal situation waste and wild; 60
 A dungeon horrible on all sides round
 As one great furnace flam'd; yet from those flames
 No light, but rather darkness visible
 Serv'd only to discover sights of woe,
 Regions of sorrow, doleful shades, where peace 65
 And rest can never dwell, hope never comes
 That comes to all; but torture without end
 Still urges, and a fiery deluge, fed
 With ever-burning sulphur unconsum'd:
 Such place eternal justice had prepar'd 70
 For those rebellious, here their pris'n ordain'd
 In utter darkness, and their portion set
 As far remov'd from God and light of heav'n,
 As from the center thrice to th' utmost pole.
 O how unlike the place from whence they fell! 75
 There the companions of his fall, o'erwhelm'd
 With floods and whirlwinds of tempestuous fire,
 He soon discerns; and wett'ring by his side
 One next himself in pow'r, and next in crime,
 Long after known in Palestine, and nam'd 80
 Beelzebub. To whom th' arch-enemy,
 And thence in heav'n call'd Satan, with bold words
 Breaking the horrid silence thus began.
 If thou beest he; but, O how fall'n! how chang'd
 From him, who in the happy realms of light 85

Cloth'd with transcendent brightness didst outline
 Miriads though bright! if he whom mutual league,
 United thoughts and counsels, equal hope
 And hazard in the glorious enterprise,
 Join'd with me once: now misery hath join'd 90
 In equal ruin; into what pit thou seest
 From what height fall'n, so much the stronger prov'd
 He with his thunder: and till then who knew
 The force of those dire arms? Yet not for those,
 Nor what the potent Victor in his rage 95
 Can else inflict, do I repent or change:
 Though chang'd in outward lustre, that fix'd mind,
 And high disdain from sense of injur'd merit,
 That with the Mightiest rais'd me to contend;
 And to the fierce contention brought along 100
 Innumerable force of spirits arm'd,
 That durst dislike his reign, and me preferring,
 His utmost pow'r with adverse pow'r oppos'd
 In dubious battle on the plains of heaven
 And shook his throne. What though the field be lost?
 All is not lost; th' unconquerable will, 106
 And study of revenge, immortal hate,
 And courage never to submit or yield,
 And what is else not to be overcome;
 That glory never shall his wrath or might 110
 Extort from me. To bow and sue for grace
 With suppliant knee, and deify his power,
 Who from the terror of this arm so late
 Doubted his empire; that were low indeed,
 That were an ignominy' and shame beneath 115
 This downfall; since by fate the strength of gods
 And his empyreal substance cannot fail;
 Since through experience of this great event
 In arms not worse, in foresight much advanc'd,
 We may with more successful hope resolve 120
 To wage by force or guile eternal war,
 Irreconcilable to our grand foe,
 Who now triumphs, and in the excess of joy
 Sole reigning holds the tyranny of heaven.
So spake th' apostate angel, though in pain; 125
Vaunting aloud, but rack'd with deep despair:

And him thus answer'd soon his bold compeer.

O Prince, O chief of many throned powers,
That led th' embattell'd seraphim to war,
Under thy conduct, and in dreadful deeps 130

Fearless, endanger'd heav'n's perpetual King,
And put to proof his high supremacy,
Whether upheld by strength, or chance, or fate;
Too well I see, and rue the dire event,
That with sad overthrow and foul defeat 135

Hath lost us heav'n, and all this mighty host
In horrible destruction laid thus low,
As far as gods and heav'nly essences
Can perish: for the mind and sp'rit remain,
Invincible, and vigour soon returns, 140

Though all our glory' extinct, and happy state
Here swallow'd up in endless misery.
But what if he, our conqu'ror (whom I now
Of force believe Almighty, since no less
Than such could have o'erpower'd such force as ours)
Have left us thus our sp'rit and strength entire 146

Strongly to suffer and support our pains
That we may so suffice his vengeful ire,
Or do him mightier service as his thralls
By right of war, whate'er his business be 150

Here in the heart of hell to work in fire,
Or do his errands in the gloomy deep;
What can it then avail, though yet we feel
Strength undiminis'd, or eternal being
To undergo eternal punishment? 155
Whereto with speedy words th' arth-fiend reply'd.

Fall'n Cherub, to be weak is miserable
Doing or suffering: but of this be sure,
To do ought good never will be our task,
But ever to do ill our sole delight, 160

As bei'ng the contrary to his high will
Whom we resist If then his providence
Out of our evil seek to bring forth good,
Our labour must be to pervert that end,
And out of good still to find means of evil; 165
Which oft-times may succeed, so as perhaps
Shall grieve him, if I fail not, and disturb

His inmost counsels from their destin'd aim.
 But see the angry victor hath recall'd
 His ministers of vengeance and pursuit 170
 Back to the gates of heaven: sulphurous hail
 Shot after us in storm, o'erblown hath laid
 The fiery surges, that from the precipice
 Of heav'n receiv'd us falling; and the thunder-
 Wing'd with red lightning and impetuous rage, 175
 Perhaps hath spent his shafts, and ceases now
 To bellow through the vast and boundless deep.
 Let us not slip th' occasion, whether scorn,
 Or satiate fury yield it from our foe.
 Seest thou yon dreary plain, forlorn and wild; 180
 The seat of desolation, void of light,
 Save what the glimm'ring of these livid flames
 Casts pale and dreadful? Thither let us tend
 From off the tossing of these fiery waves;
 There rest, if any rest can harbour there: 185
 And reassembling our afflicted powers,
 Consult how we may henceforth most offend
 Our enemy, our own loss how repair,
 How overcome this dire calamity,
 What reinforcement we may gain from hope, 190
 If not, what resolution from despair.
 Thus Satan talking to his nearest mate
 With head uplift above the wave, and eyes
 That sparkling blaz'd, his other parts besides
 Prone on the flood, extended long and large 195
 Lay floating many a rood, in bulk as huge
 As whom the fables name of monstrous size,
 Titanian, or Earth born, that warr'd on Jove,
 Briaricos or Typhon whom the den
 By ancient Tarsus held, or that sea beast 200
 Leviathan, which God of all his works
 Created hugest that swim the ocean stream:
 Him haply slumb'ring on the Norway foam
 The pilot of some small night-founder'd skiff
 Deeming some island, oft, as seamen tell, 205
 With fixed anchor on his scaly rind
*Moors by his side under the lee, while night
 Invests the sea, and wished morn delays:*

So stretch'd out huge in length the arch-fiend lay
 Chain'd on the burning lake; nor even thence 210
 Had ris'n, or heav'd his head, but that the will
 And high permission of all-ruling Heaven
 Left him at large to his own dark designs;
 That with reiterated crimes he might
 Heap on himself damnation, while he sought 215
 Evil to others; and enrag'd might see
 How all his malice serv'd but to bring forth
 Infinite goodness, grace and mercy shewn
 On man by him seduc'd; but on himself
 Treble confusion, wrath and vengeance pour'd. 220
 Forthwith upright he rears from off the pool
 His mighty stature: on each hand the flames
 Driv'n backward slope their pointing spears, and roll'd
 In billows, leave i' th' midst a horrid vale.
 Then with expanded wings he steers his flight 225
 Aloft, incumbent on the dusky air,
 That felt unusual weight; till on dry land
 He lights, if it were land that ever burn'd
 With solid, as the lake with liquid fire;
 And such appear'd in hue, as when the force 230
 Of subterranean wind transports a hill
 Torn from Pelorus, or the shatter'd side
 Of thund'ring *Ætna*, whose combustible
 And fuell'd entrails thence conceiving fire,
 Sublim'd with mineral fury, aid the winds, 235
 And leave a singed bottom all involv'd
 With stench and smoke: such resting found the sole
 Of unblest feet. Him follow'd his next mate,
 Both glorying to have 'scap'd the Stygian flood
 As gods, and by their own recover'd strength, 240
 Not by the sufferance of supernal power:
 Is this the region, this the soil, the clime,
 Said then the lost arch-angel? this the seat
 That we must change for heav'n, this mournful gloom
 For that celestial light? Be' it so, since he, 245
 Who now is sov'reign can dispose and bid
 What shall be right: farthest from him is best,
 Whom reas'on hath equall'd, force hath made supreme
Above his equals. Farewell happy fields,

Where joy for ever dwells : hail horrors, hail 250
 Infernal world, and thou profoundest hell
 Receive thy new possessor ; one who brings
 A mind not to be chang'd by place or time.
 The mind is its own place, and in itself
 Can make a heav'n of hell, a hell of heav'n. 255
 What matter where, if I be still the same,
 And what I should be, all but less than he
 Whom thunder hath made greater ? Here at last
 We shall be free : th' Almighty hath not built
 Here for his envy, will not drive us hence : 260
 Here we may reign secure, and in my choice
 To reign is worth ambition, though in hell :
 Better to reign in hell, than serve in heaven.
 But wherefore let we then our faithful friends,
 Th' associates and co-partners of our loss 265
 Lie thus astonish'd on th' oblivious pool,
 And call them not to share with us their part
 In this unhappy mansion, or once more
 With rallied arms to try what may be yet
 Regain'd in heav'n, or what more lost in hell ? 270
 So Satan spake, and him Beelzebub
 Thus answer'd. Leader of these armies bright,
 Which but th' Omnipotent none could have foil'd,
 If once they hear that voice, their liveliest pledge
 Of hope in fears and dangers, heard so oft 275
 In worst extremes, and on the perilous edge
 Of battle when it rag'd, in all assaults,
 Their surest signal, they will soon resume
 New courage and revive, though now they lie
 Groveling and prostrate on yon lake of fire, 280
 As we erewhile, astounded and amaz'd,
 No wonder, fall'n such a pernicious height.
 He scarce had ceas'd when the superior fiend
 Was moving tow'ard the shore ; his pond'rous shield,
 Ethereal temper. massy, large and round, 285
 Behind him cast ; the broad circumference
 Hung on his shoulders like the moon. whose orb
 Through optic glass the Tuscan artist views
At evening from the top of Fesolé,
Or in Valdarno, to descry new lands, 290

Rivers or mountains in her spotty globe.
 His spear, to equal which the tallest pine
 Hewn on Norwegian hills, to be the mast
 Of some great admiral, were but a wand,
 He walk'd with to support uneasy steps 295
 Over the burning marl, (not like those steps
 On heaven's azure), and the torrid clime
 Smote on him fore besides, vaulted with fire.
 Nathless he so endur'd, till on the beach
 Of that inflamed sea he stood, and call'd 300
 His legions, angel-forms, who lay intranc'd
 Thick as autumnal leaves that strow the brooks
 In Vallombrosa, where th' Etrurian shades
 High over arch'd imbow'r; or scatter'd sedge
 Afloat, when with fierce winds Orion arm'd 305
 Hath vex'd the Red-sea coast, whose waves o'erthrew
 Buziris and his Memphian cavalry,
 While with perfidious hatred they pursu'd
 The sojourners of Goshen, who beheld
 From the safe shore their floating carcases 310
 And broken chariot wheels: so thick bestrown,
 Abject and lost lay these, covering the flood,
 Under amazement of their hideous change.
 He call'd so loud, that all the hollow deep
 Of hell resounded. Princes, potentates, 315
 Warriors, the flow'r of heav'n, once yours, now lost,
 If such astonishment as this can seize
 Eternal sp'rits; or have ye chos'n this place
 After the toil of battle to repose
 Your wearied virtue, for the ease you find 320
 To slumber here, as in the vales of heav'n?
 Or in this abject posture have ye sworn
 T'adore the conqueror? who now beholds
 Cherub and Seraph rolling in the flood
 With scatter'd arms and ensigns, till anon 325
 His swift pursuers from heav'n-gates discern
 Th' advantage, and descending tread us down
 Thus drooping, or with linked thunderbolts
 Transfix us to the bottom of this gulph.
 Awake, arise, or be for ever fall'n. 330
They heard, and were abash'd, and up they sprung

To do him wanton rites, which cost them woe.
Yet thence his lustful orgies he enlarg'd 415
Ev'n to that hill of scandal, by the grove
Of Moloch homicide; lust hard by hate;
Till good Josiah drove them thence to hell.
With these came they, who from the bord'ring flood
Of old Euphrates, to the brook that parts 420
Egypt from Syrian ground, had general names
Of Baalim and Ashtaroth; those male,
These feminine. For spirits when they please
Can either sex assume, or both; so soft
And uncompounded is their essence pure; 425
Not ti'd or manacled with joint or limb,
Nor founded on the brittle strength of bones,
Like cumbrous flesh; but in what shape they chuse
Dilated or condens'd, bright or obscure,
Can execute their airy purposes, 430
And works of love or enmity fulfil.
For those the race of Israel oft forsook
Their living strength, and unfrequented left
His righteous altar, bowing lowly down
To bestial gods: for which their heads as low 435
Bow'd down in battle, sunk before the spear
Of despicable foes. With these in troop
Came Astoreth, whom the Phœnicians call'd
Astarte, queen of heav'n, with crescent horns;
To which bright image nightly by the moon 440
Sidonian virgins paid their vows and songs;
In Sion also not unsung, where stood
Her temple on th' offensive mountain, built
By that uxorious king, whose heart, though large,
Beguil'd by fair idolatresses, fell 445
To idols foul. Thammuz came next behind,
Whose annual wound in Lebanon allur'd
The Syrian damsels to lament his fate
In amorous ditties all a summer's day;
While smooth Adonis from his native rock 450
Ran purple to the sea, suppos'd with blood
Of Thammuz yearly wounded: the love-tale
Infects Sion's daughters with like heat;
Whose wanton passions in the sacred porch

Ezekiel saw, when, by the vision led, 455
 His eye survey'd the dark idolatries
 Of alienated Judah. Next came one,
 Who mourn'd in earnest, when the captive ark
 Maim'd his brute image, head and hands lopt off
 In his own temple, on the grunsel edge, 460
 Where he fell flat, and sham'd his worshippers :
 Dagon his name, sea monster, upward man
 And downward fish : yet had his temple high
 Rear'd in Azotus, dreaded through the coast
 Of Palestine, in Gath, and Ascalon, 465
 And Accaron, and Gaza's frontier bounds.
 Him follow'd Rimmon, whose delightful seat
 Was fair Damascus, on the fertile banks
 Of Abbana and Parphar, lucid streams.
 He also against the house of God was bold : 470
 A leper once he lost, and gain'd a king
 Ahaz, his sottish conqueror, whom he drew
 God's altar to disparage, and displace,
 For one of Syrian mode, whereon to burn
 His odious off'rings, and adore the gods 475
 Whom he had vanquish'd. After these appear'd
 A crew, who under names of old renown,
 Osiris, Isis, Orus, and their train.
 With monstrous shapes and forceries abus'd
 Fanatic Egypt, and her priests, to seek 480
 Their wand'ring gods disguis'd in brutish forms,
 Rather than human. Nor did Iir'el 'scape
 Th' infection, when their borrow'd gold compos'd
 The calf in Oreb ; and the rebel king
 Doubled that sin in Bethel and in Dan, 485
 Lik'ning his Maker to the grazed ox,
 Jehovah ; who in one night, when he pass'd
 From Egypt marching, equall'd with one stroke
 Both her first-born and all her bleating gods.
 Belial came last, than whom a spirit more lewd 490
 Fell not from heaven, or more gross to love
 Vice for itself : to him no temple stood
 Or altar sinok'd ; yet who more oft than he
 In temples and at altars, when the priest
 Turns atheist, as did Eli's sons, who fill'd 495

That fought at Thebes and Ilium, on each side
 Mix'd with auxiliar gods ; and what resounds
 In fable or romance of Uther's son 580
 Begirt with British and Armoric knights ;
 And all who since, baptiz'd or infidel,
 Jousted in Aspramont or Montalban,
 Damasco, or Morocco, or Trebisond ;
 Or whom Biserta sent from Afric shore, 585
 When Charlemain with all his peerage fell
 By Fontarabbia. Thus far these beyond
 Compare of mortal prowess, yet observ'd
 Their dread commander : he, above the rest
 In shape and gesture proudly eminent, 590
 Stood like a tow'r ; his form had yet not lost
 All her original brightness, nor appear'd
 Less than arch-angel ruin'd, and th' excess
 Of glory obscur'd : as when the sun new ris'n
 Looks through the horizontal misty air 595
 Shorn of his beams ; or from behind the moon,
 In dim eclipse, disastrous twilight sheds
 On half the nations, and with fear of change
 Perplexes monarchs. Darken'd so, yet shone
 Above them all th' arch-angel : but his face 600
 Deep scars of thunder had entrench'd, and care
 Sat on his faded cheek, but under brows
 Of dauntless courage, and considerate pride
 Waiting revenge : cruel his eye, but cast
 Signs of remorse and passion to behold 605
 The fellows of his crime, the foll'wers rather,
 (Far other once beheld in bliss,) condemn'd
 For ever now to have their lot in pain ;
 Millions of spirits for his fault amerc'd
 Of heav'n, and from eternal splendours flung 610
 For his revolt ; yet faithful how they stood,
 Their glory wither'd : as when heav'n's fire
 Hath scath'd the forest-oaks, or mountain pines,
 With singed top their stately growth, though bare,
 Stands on the blasted heath. He now prepar'd 615
 To speak ; whereat their doubled ranks they bend
 From wing to wing, and half inclose him round
 With all his peers : attention held him mute.

Thrice he essay'd, and thrice, in spite of scorn,
 Tears, such as angels weep, burst forth; at last 620
 Words interwove with sighs found out their way.

O myriads of immortal sp'rits, O powers
 Matchless, but with th' Almighty; and that strife
 Was not inglorious, though th' event was dire,
 As this place testifies, and this dire change, 625
 Hateful to utter: but what pow'r of mind,

Foreseeing or presaging, from the depth
 Of knowledge past or present, could have fear'd,
 How such united force of gods, how such
 As stood like these, could ever know repulse? 630

For who can yet believe, though after loss,
 That all these puissant legions, whose exile
 Hath emptied heav'n, shall fail to reascend,
 Self rais'd, and repossess their native seat?

For me be witness all the host of heav'n 635
 If counsels different, or danger shunn'd

By me, have lost our hopes. But he who reigns
 Monarch in heav'n, till then as one secure
 Sat on his throne, upheld by old repute,
 Consent or custom, and his regal state 640
 Put forth at full, but still his strength conceal'd,

Which tempted our attempt, and wrought our fall.
 Henceforth his might we know, and know our own;
 So as not either to provoke, or dread

New war, provok'd; our better part remains, 645
 To work in clo : design, by fraud or guile,

What force effected not: that he no less
 At length from us may find, who overcomes
 By force, hath overcome but half his foe.

Space may produce new worlds; whereof so rise 650
 There went a fame in heav'n, that he ere long
 Intended to create, and therein plant

A generation, whom his choice regard
 Should favour equal to the sons of heaven:
 Thither, if but to pry, shall be perhaps 655
 Our first eruption, thither or elsewhere:

For this infernal pit shall never hold
 Celestial sp'rits in bondage, nor th' abyss
 Long under darkness cover. But these thoughts

Sheer o'er the crystal battlements ; from morn
 To noon he fell, from noon to dewy eve,
 A summer's day : and with the setting sun
 Dropt from the Zenith like a falling star, 74
 On Lemnos th' Ægean isle : thus they relate,
 Erring ; for he with this rebellious rout
 Fell long before : nor ought avail'd him now
 T' have built in heav'n high tow'rs ; dor did he 'scap
 By all his engines, but was headlong sent 75
 With all his industrious crew to build in hell.

Mean-while the winged heralds by command
 Of sov'reign pow'r, with awful ceremony
 And trumpets found, throughout the host proclaim
 A solemn council forthwith to be held 75
 At Pandemonium, the high capital
 Of Satan and his peers : their summons call'd
 From ev'ry band and squared regiment
 By place or choice the worthiest ; they anon
 With hundreds, and with thousands, trooping came
 Attended : all access was throng'd. the gates 76
 And porches wide, but chief the spacious hall
 (Though like a cover'd field, where champions bold
 Went ride in arm'd. and at the Soldan's chair
 Desid'd the best of Panim chivalry 76
 To mortal combat, or career with lance)
 Thick swarm'd, both on the ground and in the air
 Brush'd with the hiss of ruffling wings. As bees
 In spring-time, when the sun with Taurus rides,
 Pour forth their populous youth about the hive 77
 In clusters ; they among fresh dews and flowers
 Fly to and fro, or on the smooched plank,
 The suburb of their straw-built citadel,
 New rubb'd with balm, expatiate and confer
 New state-affairs. So thick the airy crowd 77
 Swarm'd and were straiten'd ; till the signal giv'n,
 Behold a wonder ! they but now who seem'd
 In bigness to surpass earth's giant sons,
 Now less than smallest dwarfs, in narrow room
 Throng numberless, like that Pygmean race 78
 Beyond the Indian mount ; or fairy elves,
 Whose midnight-revels by a forest side,

Or fountain, some belated peasant fees,
Or dreams he sees; while overhead the moon
Sits arbitress, and nearer to the earth 785
Wheels her pale course; they on their mirth and dance
Intent, with jocund music charm his ear;
At once with joy and fear his heart rebounds.
Thus incorporeal spirits to smallest forms
Reduc'd their shapes immense, and were at large, 790
Though without number still, amidst the hall
Of that infernal court. But far within
And in their own dimensions like themselves,
The great Seraphic lords and Cherubim
In close recess and secret conclave sat, 795
A thousand demi gods on golden seats,
Frequent and full. After short silence then,
And summons read, the great consult began.

END OF THE FIRST BOOK.

2

PARADISE LOST.

B O O K II.

THE ARGUMENT.

The consultation begun, Satan debates whether another battle be to be hazarded for the recovery of heaven; some advise it, others dissuade. A third proposal is preferred, mentioned before by Satan, to search the truth of that prophecy or tradition in heaven concerning another world, and another kind of creature, equal, or not much inferior to themselves, about this time to be created: Their doubt who shall be sent on this difficult search: Satan himself undertakes alone the voyage, is honoured and applauded. The council thus ended, the rest betake them several ways, and to several employments, as their inclinations lead them, to entertain the time till Satan return. He passes on his journey to hell gates, finds them shut, and who sat there to guard them, by whom at length they are opened, and discovered to him the great gulph between hell and heaven; with what difficulty he passes through, directed by Chaos, the power of that place, to the sight of this new world which he sought.

HIGH on a throne of royal state, which far
Outshone the wealth of Ormus and of Ind,
Or where the gorgeous East with richest hand
Show'rs on her kings barbaric pearl and gold,
Satan exalted sat, by merit rais'd
To that bad eminence; and from despair
Thus high uplifted beyond hope, aspires
Beyond thus high; insatiate to pursue
Vain war with heav'n; and, by success untaught,
His proud imaginations thus display'd. 10

Pow'rs and dominions, deities of heav'n;
For since no deep within her gulf can hold
Immortal vigour, though oppress'd and fall'n,
I give not heav'n for lost. From this descent
Celestial virtues rising, will appear 15
More glorious and more dread than from no fall,

And trust themselves to fear no second fate.
 Me though just right, and the fix'd laws of heav'n
 Did first create your leader; next, free choice;
 With what besides, in council or in fight, 20
 Hath been atchiev'd of merit; yet this loss,
 Thus far at least recover'd, hath much more
 Establish'd in a safe unenvi'd throne,
 Yielded with full consent. The happier state
 In heav'n, which follows dignity, might draw 25
 Envy from each inferior: but who here
 Will envy whom the highest place exposes
 Foremost to stand against the Thund'rer's aim,
 Your bulwark, and condemns to greatest share
 Of endless pain? Where there is then no good 30
 For which to strive, no strife can grow up there
 From faction: for none sure will claim in hell
 Precedence; none, whose portion is so small
 Of present pain, that with ambitious mind
 Will covet more. With this advantage then 35
 To union, and firm faith, and firm accord,
 More than can be in heav'n, we now return
 To claim our just inheritance of old,
 Surer to prosper than prosperity
 Could have assur'd us; and by what best way, 40
 Whether of open war or covert guile,
 We now debate: who can advise may speak.
 He ceas'd; and next him Moloch, scepter'd king,
 Stood up, the strongest and the fiercest sp'rit
 That fought in heav'n, now fiercer by despair. 45
 His trust was with th' Eternal to be deem'd
 Equal in strength; and rather than be less,
 Car'd not to be at all; with that care lost
 Went all his fear: of God, or hell, or worse
 He reck'd not: and these words thereafter spake. 50
 My sentence is for open war: of wiles,
 More unexpert, I boast not: them let those
 Contrive who need; or when they need, not now.
 For while they sit contriving, shall the rest,
 Millions that stand in arms, and long wait 55
 The signal to ascend, sit ling'ring here
 Heav'n's fugitives, and for their dwelling place
 Accept this dark opprobrious den of shame,

The prison of his tyranny who reigns
 By our delay? No, let us rather choose, 60
 Arm'd with hell flames and fury, all at once
 O'er heav'n's high tow'rs to force resitless way,
 Turning our tortures into horrid arms
 Against the torturer; when to meet the noise
 Of his Almighty engine he shall hear 65
 Infernal thunder: and for lightning, see
 Black fire and horror shot with equal rage
 Among his Angels: and his throne itself
 Mix'd with Tartarian sulphur, and strange fire,
 His own invented torments. But perhaps 70
 The way seems difficult and steep to scale
 With upright wing against a higher foe.
 Let such bethink them, if the sleepy drench
 Of that forgetful lake benumb not still,
 That in our proper motion we ascend 75
 Up to our native seat: descent and fall
 'To us is adverse. Who but felt of late,
 When the fierce foe hung on our broken rear
 Insulting, and pursu'd us through the deep,
 With what compulsion and laborious flight 80
 We sunk thus low? The ascent is easy then;
 Th' event is fear'd; should we again provoke
 Our stronger, some worse way his wrath may find
 To our destruction; if there be in hell
 Fear to be worse destroy'd. What can be worse 85
 Than to dwell here, driv'n out from bliss, condemn'd
 In this-aborred deep to utter woe;
 Where pain of unextinguishable fire
 Must exercise us without hope of end,
 The vassals of his anger, when the scourge 90
 Inexorably, and the torturing hour
 Calls us to penance? More destroy'd than thus,
 We should be quite abolish'd, and expire.
 What fear we then? What doubt we to incense
 His utmost ire? which to the height enrag'd 95
 Will either quite consume us, and reduce
 To nothing this essential; happier far,
 Than miserable to have eternal being:
 Or if our substance be indeed divine,
 And cannot cease to be, we are at worst 100

On this side nothing ; and by proof we feel
 Our pow'r sufficient to disturb his heav'n,
 And with perpetual inroads to alarm,
 Though inaccessible, his fatal throne :
 Which, if not victory, is yet revenge.

He ended frowning, and his look denounc'd
 Desp'rate revenge, and battle dangerous
 To less than gods On th' other side uprose
 Belial, in act more graceful and humane :
 A fairer person lost not heav'n ; he seem'd
 For dignity compos'd, and high exploit :
 But all was false and hollow ; though his tongue
 Dropt manna, and could make the worse appear
 The better reason, to perplex and dash
 Maturest counsels : for his thoughts were low ;
 To vice industrious, but to nobler deeds
 Timorous and slothful : yet he pleas'd the ear,
 And with persuasive accent thus began.

I should be much for open war, O peers,
 As not behind in hate ; if what was urg'd
 Main reason to persuade immediate war,
 Did not dissuade me most, and seem to cast
 Ominous conjecture on the whole success ;
 When he who most excels in act of arms,
 In what he counsels, and in what excels,
 Mistrustful grounds his courage on despair
 And utter dissolution, as the scope
 Of all his aim, after some dire revenge.
 First, what revenge ? The tow'rs of Heav'n are fill'd
 With armed watch, that render all access
 Impregnable : oft on the bord'ring deep
 Incamp their legions ; or with obscure wing,
 Scout far and wide into the realm of night,
 Scorning surprize. Or could we break our way
 By force, and at our heels all Hell should rise
 With blackest insurrection, to confound
 Heav'n's purest light ; yet our great enemy,
 All uncorruptible, would on his throne
 Sit unpolluted ; and th' ethereal mold,
 Incapable of stain, would soon expel
 Her mischief, and purge off the baser fire,
 Victorious. Thus repuls'd, our final hope

Is flat despair ; we must exasperate
 Th' almighty victor to spend all his rage,
 And that must end us : that must be our cure, 145
 To be no more. Sad cure ! for who would lose,
 Though full of pain, this intellectual being,
 Those thoughts that wander through eternity,
 To perish rather, swallowed up and lost
 In the wide womb of uncreated night, 150
 Devoid of sense and motion ? and who knows,
 Let this be good, whether our angry foe
 Can give it, or will ever ? how he can,
 Is doubtful ; that he never will, is sure.
 Will he, so wise, let loose at once his ire, 155
 Belike through impotence, or unaware,
 To give his enemies their wish, and end
 Them in his anger, whom his anger saves,
 To punish endless ? wherefore cease we then ?
 Say they who counsel war ; we are decreed, 160
 Reserv'd, and destin'd to eternal woe ;
 Whatever doing, what can we suffer more ?
 What can we suffer worse ? Is this then worst,
 Thus sitting, thus consulting, thus in arms ?
 What, when we fled amain, pursu'd and struck 165
 With heav'n's afflicting thunder ; and besought
 The deep to shelter us ? this hell then seem'd
 A refuge from those wounds : or when we lay
 Chain'd on the burning lake, that sure was worse.
 What if the breath that kindled those grim fires, 170
 Awak'd, should blow them into sev'nfold rage,
 And plunge us in the flames ? or, from above,
 Should intermitted vengeance arm again
 His red right hand to plague us ! what if all
 Her stores were open'd, and this firmament 175
 Of hell should spout her cataracts of fire,
 Impendent horrors, threat'ning hideous fall
 One day upon our heads ; while we perhaps
 Designing or exhorting glorious war,
 Caught in a fiery tempest shall be hurl'd 180
 Each on his rock transfix'd, the sport and play
 Of wracking whirlwinds ; or for ever sunk
 Under yon boiling ocean, wrapt in chains,
 There to converse with everlasting groans,

Unrespited, unpitied, unrepriev'd, 185
 Ages of hopeless end? this would be worse.
 War therefore, open or conceal'd, alike
 My voice dissuades; for what can force or guile
 With him, or who deceive his mind, whose eye
 Views all things at one view? he from heav'n's height
 All these our motions vain, sees and derides; 191
 Not more almighty to resist our might
 Than wise to frustrate all our plots and wiles.
 Shall we then live thus vile, the race of heav'n
 Thus trampled, thus expell'd, to suffer here 195
 Chains and these torments? Better these than work,
 By my advice; since fate inevitable
 Subdues us, and omnipotent decree,
 The victor's will. To suffer, as to do,
 Our strength is equal, nor the law unjust 200
 That so ordains: this was at first resolv'd,
 If we were wise against so great a foe
 Contending, and so doubtful what might fall.
 I laugh, when those who at the spear are bold
 And vent'rous, if that fail them, shrink, and fear, 205
 What yet they know must follow, to endure
 Exile or ignominy', or bonds, or pain,
 The sentence of their conqu'ror: this is now
 Our doom; which if we can sustain and bear,
 Our supreme foe in time may much remit 210
 His anger: and perhaps thus far remov'd,
 Not mind us not offending, satisf'd
 With what is punish'd; whence these raging fires
 Will slacken, if his breath stir not their flames.
 Our purer essence then will overcome 215
 Their noxious vapour; or inur'd, not feel;
 Or chang'd at length, and to the place conform'd
 In temper, and in nature, will receive
 Familiar the fierce heat, and void of pain;
 This horror will grow mild, this darkness light; 220
 Besides what hope the never ending flight
 Of future days may bring, what chance, what change
 Worth waiting? since our present lot appears
 For happy, though but ill; for ill, not worst;
 If we procure not to ourselves more woe. 225
 Thus Belial with words cloth'd in reason's garb

self'd ignoble ease, and peaceful sloth,
 peace; and after him thus Mammon spake.
 ther to disenthroned the King of heav'n
 war, if war be best, or to regain 230
 own right lost; him to unthroned we then
 hope, when everlasting Fate shall yield
 tickle Chance, and Chaos judge the strife:
 former vain to hope, argues as vain
 latter: for what place can be for us 235
 in heav'n's bounds, unless heav'n's Lord supreme
 overpower? Suppose he should relent,
 publish grace to all, on promise made
 ew subjection; with what eyes could we
 d in his presence humble, and receive 240
 t laws impos'd, to celebrate his throne
 i warbled hymns, and to his godhead sing
 'd Halleluiahs; while he lordly sits
 envied sov'reign, and his altar breathes
 orsial odours and ambrosial flowers, 245
 servile offerings? This must be our task
 av'n, this our delight; how wearisome
 nity so spent in worship paid
 hom we hate! Let us not then pursue,
 orce impossible, by leave obtain'd, 250
 ceptable, though in heav'n, our state
 lendid vassalage; but rather seek
 own good from ourselves, and from our own
 to ourselves, though in this vast recess,
 , and to none accountable, preferring 255
 l liberty before the easy yoke
 rvile pomp. Our greatness will appear
 i most conspicuous, when great things of small,
 il of hurtful, prosp'rous of adverse.
 can create; and in what place so'er 260
 ve under ev'il, and work ease out of pain,
 ough labour and endurance. - This deep world
 arkness do we dread? How oft amidst
 k clouds and dark doth Heav'n's all-ruling Sire
 ise to reside, his glory unobscur'd, 265
 with the majesty of darkness round
 rs his throne; from whence deep thunders roar,
 ing their rage, and heav'n resembles hell?

As he our darkness, cannot we this light
 Imitate when we please? This desert soil 270
 Wants not her hidden lustre, gems and gold:
 Nor want we skill or art, from whence to raise
 Magnificence; and what can heav'n show more?
 Our torments also may in length of time
 Become our elements; these piercing fires 275
 As soft as now severe, our temper chang'd
 Into their temper; which must needs remove
 The sensibility of pain. All things invite
 To peaceful counsels, and the settled state
 Of order, how in safety best we may 280
 Compose our present evils, with regard
 Of what we are, and where; dismissing quite
 All thoughts of war. Ye have what I advise.
 He scarce had finish'd, when such murmur fill'd
 Th' assembly, as when hollow rocks retain 285
 The found of blustering winds, which all night long
 Had rous'd the sea, now with hoarse cadence lull
 Seafaring men o'erwatch'd, whose bark by chance,
 Or pinnace, anchors in a craggy bay
 After the tempest: such applause was heard 290
 As Mammon ended, and his sentence pleas'd,
 Advising peace; for such another field
 They dreaded worse than hell: so much the fear
 Of thunder and the sword of Michael
 Wrought still within them; and no less desire 295
 To found this nether empire, which might rise,
 By policy, and long process of time,
 In emulation opposite to Heav'n.
 Which when Beelzebub perceiv'd, than whom,
 Satan except, none higher sat, with grave 300
 Aspect he rose, and in his rising seem'd
 A pillar of state; deep on his front engraven
 Deliberation sat, and public care;
 And princely counsel in his face yet shone,
 Majestic though in ruin: sage he stood 305
 With Atlantean shoulders fit to bear
 The weight of mightiest monarchies; his look
 Drew audience and attention still as night,
 Or summer's noon-tide air, while thus he spake.
 Thrones and imperial pow'rs, offspring of heav'n,

Ethereal virtues ; or these titles now 311
 Must we renounce, and changing style, be call'd
 Princes of hell ; for so the popular vote
 Inclines, here to continue, and build up here
 A growing empire ; doubtless while we dream, 315
 And know not that the King of heav'n hath doom'd
 This place our ~~dwelling~~ ; not our safe retreat
 Beyond his potent arm to live exempt
 From heav'n's high jurisdiction, in new league
 Banded against his throne ; but to remain. 320
 In strictest bondage, though thus far remov'd,
 Under th' inevitable curb, reserv'd
 His captive multitude : for he, be sure,
 In height or depth, still first and last will reign
 Sole king, and of his kingdom lose no part 325
 By our revolt : but over hell extend
 His empire and with iron sceptre rule
 Us here, as with his golden those in heav'n.
 What fit we then projecting, peace and war ?
 War hath determin'd us, and foil'd with loss 330
 Irreparable ; terms of peace yet none
 Vouchsaf'd or sought ; for what peace will be giv'n
 To us inflav'd, but custody severe,
 And stripes, and arbitrary punishment
 Inflicted ? and what peace can we return, 335
 But to our pow'r, hostility, and hate,
 Untam'd reluctance, and revenge, though slow,
 Yet ever plotting how the conqueror least
 May reap his conquest, and may least rejoice
 In doing what we most in suffering feel ? 340
 Nor will occasion want, nor shall we need
 With dang'rous expedition to invade
 Heav'n, whose high walls fear no assault or siege,
 Or ambush from the deep. What if we find
 Some easier enterprise ? There is a place, 345
 (If ancient and prophetic fame in heav'n
 Err not), another world, the happy seat
 Of some new race call'd Man, about this time
 To be created like to us, though less
 In pow'r and excellence, but favour'd more 350
 Of him who rules above ; so was his will
Pronounc'd among the gods, and by an oath,

That shook heav'n's whole circumference, confirm
 Thither let us bend all our thoughts, to learn
 What creatures there inhabit. of what mould
 Or substance, how endu'd, and what their power,
 And where their weakness, how attempted best,
 By force or subtlety. Though heav'n be shut,
 And heav'n's high Arbitrator sit secure
 In his own strength, this place may lie expos'd.
 The utmost border of his kingdom, left
 To their defence who hold it: here perhaps
 Some advantageous act may be achiev'd
 By sudden onset, either with hell fire
 To waste his whole creation; or possess
 All as our own, and drive, as we were driven,
 The puny inhabitants; or if not drive,
 Seduce them to our party, that their God
 May prove their foe, and with repenting hand
 Abolish his own works. This would surpass
 Common revenge, and interrupt his joy
 In our confusion, and our joy upraise
 In his disturbance; when his darling sons,
 Hurl'd headlong to partake with us, shall curse
 Their frail original, and faded bliss,
 Faded so soon. Advise if this be worth
 Attempting, or to sit in darkness here
 Hatching vain empires. Thus Beelzebub
 Pleaded his devilish counsel, first devis'd
 By Satan, and in part propos'd: for whence,
 But from the author of all ill, could spring
 So deep a malice, to confound the race
 Of mankind in one root, and earth with hell
 To mingle and involve. done all to spite
 The great Creator? But their spite still serves
 His glory to augment. The bold design
 Pleas'd highly those infernal states, and joy
 Sparkled in all their eyes; with full assent
 They vote: whereat his speech he thus renews.
 Well have ye judg'd, well ended long debate,
 Synod of gods, and, like to what ye are,
 Great things resolv'd, which from the lowest deep
 Will once more lift us up, in spite of fate,
 Nearer our ancient seat; perhaps in view

Of those bright confines whence, with neighb'ring arms
 And opportune excursions, we may chance 396
 Re-enter heav'n; or else in some mild zone
 Dwell not unvisited of heav'n's fair light,
 Secure and at the bright'ning orient beam
 Purge off this gloom: the soft delicious air, 400
 To heal the scar of those corrosive fires,
 Shall breathe her balm. But first whom shall we send
 In search of this new world; whom shall we find
 Sufficient? who shall tempt with wand'ring feet
 The dark unbottom'd, infinite abyss, 405
 And through the palpable obscure find out
 His uncouth way, or spread his airy flight
 Upborne with undefatigable wings
 Over the vast abrupt, ere he arrive
 The happy isle? What strength, what art can then
 Suffice, or what evasion bear him safe 411
 Through the strict senteries and stations thick
 Of Angels watching round? Here he had need
 All circumspection, and we now no less
 Choice in our suffrage; for on whom we send, 415
 The weight of all and our last hope relies.
 This said, he sat; and expectation held
 His look suspense, awaiting who appear'd
 To second, or oppose, or undertake
 The perilous attempt: but all sat mute, 420
 Pond'ring the danger with deep thoughts, and each
 In other's count'nance read his own dismay,
 Astonish'd. None among the choice and prime
 Of those heav'n-warring champions could be found
 So hardy, as to proffer, or accept 425
 Alone the dreadful voyage; till at last
 Satan, whom now transcendent glory rais'd
 Above his fellows, with monarchical pride,
 Conscious of highest worth, unmov'd, thus spake.
 O progeny of heav'n, empyrial thrones, 430
 With reason hath deep silence and demur
 Seiz'd us, though undismay'd: long is the way
 And hard, that out of hell leads up to light:
 Our prison strong; this huge convex of fire,
 Outrageous to devour, immures us round 435
Ninefold; and gates of burning adamant

Barr'd over us, prohibit all egress.
 These pass'd, if any pass, the void profound
 Of essential night receives him next
 Wide gaping, and with utter loss of being 440
 Threatens him, plung'd in that abortive gulf,
 If thence he 'scape into whatever world,
 Or unknown region, what remains him less
 Than unknown dangers, and as hard escape?
 But I should ill become this throne, O peers, 445
 And this imperial sov'reignty, adorn'd
 With splendour, arm'd with pow'r, if ought propos'd
 And judg'd of public moment, in the shape
 Of difficulty or danger, could deter
 Me from attempting. Wherefore do I assume 450
 These royalties, and not refuse to reign,
 Refusing to accept as great a share
 Of hazard as of honour, due alike
 To him who reigns, and so much to him due
 Of hazard more, as he above the rest 455
 High honour'd sits? Go therefore, mighty powers,
 Terror of heav'n, though fall'n; intend at home;
 While here shall be our home, what best may ease
 The present misery, and render hell
 More tolerable; if there be cure or charm, 460
 To respite, or deceive, or slack the pain
 Of this ill mansion: intermit no watch
 Against a wakeful foe, while I abroad
 Through all the coasts of dark destruction seek
 Deliv'rance for us all: this enterprise 465
 None shall partake with me. Thus saying rose
 The monarch, and prevented all reply;
 Prudent, lest, from his resolution rais'd,
 Others among the chief might offer now
 (Certain to be refus'd) what erst they fear'd; 470
 And so refus'd, might in opinion stand
 His rivals; winning cheap the high repute,
 Which he through hazard huge must earn. But they
 Dreaded not more th' adventure, than his voice
 Forbidding; and at once with him they rose: 475
 Their rising all at once was as the sound
 Of thunder heard remote. Towards him they bend
 With awful reverence prone; and as a god

Extol him equal to the Highest in heav'n ;
 Nor fail'd they to express how much they prais'd, 480
 That for the general safety he despis'd
 His own : for neither do the spirits damn'd
 Lose all their virtue : lest bad men should boast
 Their specious deeds on earth, which glory 'excites,
 Or close ambition varnish'd o'er with zeal. 485
 Thus they their doubtful consultations dark
 Ended, rejoicing in their matchless chief :
 As when from mountain tops the dusky clouds
 Ascending, while the north wind sleeps, o'erspread
 Heav'n's cheerful face, the louring element 490
 Scowls o'er the darken'd landscape, snow, or shower ;
 If chance the radiant sun with farewell sweet
 Extends his ev'ning beam, the fields revive,
 The birds their notes renew, and bleating herds
 Attest their joy, that hill and valley rings. 495
 O shame to men ! devil to devil damn'd
 Firm concord holds, men only disagree
 Of creatures rational, though under hope
 Of heav'nly grace : and God proclaiming peace,
 Yet live in hatred, enmity, and strife 500
 Among themselves, and levy cruel wars,
 Wasting the earth, each other to destroy ;
 As if (which might induce us to accord)
 Man had not hellish foes enow besides,
 That, day and night, for his destruction wait. 505
 The Stygian council thus dissolv'd ; and forth
 In order came the grand infernal peers :
 'Midst came their mighty paramount, and seem'd
 Alone th' antagonist of heav'n, nor less
 Than hell's dread emperor, with pomp supreme, 510
 And God-like imitated state ; him round
 A globe of fiery Seraphim inclos'd.
 With bright emblazonry, and horrent arms,
 Then of their session ended, they bid cry
 With trumpets regal sound the great result ; 515
 Tow'ards the four winds four speedy Cherubim
 Put to their mouths the sounding alchemy,
 By herald's voice explain'd ; the hollow abyss
 Heard far and wide, and all the host of hell
 With deaf'ning shout return'd them loud acclaim. 520

Thence more at ease their minds, and somewhat rais'd
 By false presumptuous hope, the ranged powers
 Disband, and wand'ring, each his several way
 Pursues, as inclination or sad choice
 Leads him perplex'd, where he may likeliest find 525
 Truce to his restless thoughts, and entertain
 The irksome hours, till his great chief return.
 Part on the plain, or in the air sublime,
 Upon the wing, or in swift race contend,
 As at th' Olympian games or Pythian fields; 530
 Part curb their fiery steeds, or shun the goal
 With rapid wheels, or fronted brigades form.
 As when, to warn proud cities, war appears
 Wag'd in the troubled sky, and armies rush
 To battle in the clouds, before each van 535
 Prick forth the airy knights and couch their spears,
 Till thickest legions close; with feats of arms
 From either end of heav'n the welkin burns.
 Others, with vast Typhœan rage more fell,
 Rend up both rocks and hills, and ride the air 540
 In whirlwind; Hell scarce holds the wild uproar.
 As when Alcides, from Oechalia crown'd
 With conquest, felt th' invenom'd robe, and tore
 Through pain up by the roots Thessalian pines;
 And Lichas from the top of Oeta threw 545
 Into th' Euboic sea. Others more mild,
 Retreated in a silent valley, sing
 With notes angelical to many a harp
 Their own heroic deeds and hapless fall
 By doom of battle; and complain that fate 550
 Free virtue should intrall to force or chance.
 Their songs were partial; but the harmony
 (What could it less when sp'rits immortal sing?)
 Suspended hell, and took with ravishment
 The thronging audience. In discourse more sweet, 555
 (For eloquence the soul, song charms the sense),
 Others apart sat on a hill retir'd,
 In thoughts more elevate, and reason'd high
 Of providence, foreknowledge, will and fate;
 Fix'd fate, free will, foreknowledge absolute; 560
 And found no end, in wand'ring mazes lost.
 Of good and evil much they argu'd then,

Of happiness and final misery,
 Passion and apathy, and glory' and shame ;
 Vain wisdom all, and false philosophy : 565
 Yet, with a pleasing forcery, could charm
 Pain for a while, or anguish, and excite
 Fallacious hope, or arm th' obdured breast
 With stubborn patience, as with triple steel.
 Another part, in squadrons and gross bands, 570
 On bold adventure to discover wide
 That dismal world, if any clime perhaps
 Might yield them easier habitation, bend
 Four ways their flying march, along the banks
 Of four infernal rivers, that disgorge 575
 Into the burning lake their baleful streams ;
 Abhorred Styx, the flood of deadly hate ;
 Sad Acheron, of sorrow, black and deep :
 Cocytus, nam'd of lamentation loud
 Heard on the rueful stream ; fierce Phlegethon, 580
 Whose waves of torrent fire inflame with rage.
 Far off from these, a slow and silent stream,
 Lethe, the river of oblivion, rolls
 Her wat'ry labyrinth ; whereof who drinks,
 Forthwith his former state and being forgets, 585
 Forgets both joy and grief, pleasure and pain.
 Beyond this flood a frozen continent
 Lies dark and wild, beat with perpetual storms
 Of whirlwind and dire hail, which on firm land
 Thaws not, but gathers heap, and ruin seems 590
 Of ancient pile ; all else deep snow and ice ;
 A gulph profound, as that Serbonian bog
 Betwixt Damiatra and mount Casius old,
 Where armies whole have sunk : the parching air
 Burns froze, and cold performs th' effect of fire. 595
 Thither by harpy-footed furies hal'd,
 At certain revolutions, all the damn'd
 Are brought ; and feel by turns the bitter change
 Of fierce extremes, extremes by change more fierce ;
 From beds of raging fire to starve in ice : 600
 Their soft ethereal warmth, and there to pine
 Immoveable, infix'd, and frozen round,
 Periods of time ; thence hurried back to fire.
 They ferry over this Lethæan sound

Hell born, not to contend with sp'rits of heav'n.

To whom the goblin full of wrath reply'd,
Art thou that traitor angel, art thou he,
Who first broke peace in heav'n. and faith, till then
Unbroken; and in proud rebellious arms 691

Drew after him the third part of heav'n's sons,
Conjur'd against the High'est; for which both thou
And they, outcast from God, are here condemn'd
To waste eternal days in woe and pain? 695

And reckon'st thou thyself with sp'rits of heav'n,
Hell doom'd, and breath'st defiance here and scorn,
Where I reign king; and, to enrage thee more,
Thy king and lord? Back to thy punishment,
False fugitive, and to thy speed add wings; 700

Lest with a whip of scorpions I pursue
Thy ling'ring, or with one stroke of this dart
Strange horror seize thee, and pangs unfelt before.

So spake the grisly terror, and in shape,
So speaking and so threat'ning, grew tenfold 705
More dreadful and deform. On th' other side

Incens'd with indignation Satan stood
Unterrify'd; and like a comet burn'd
That fires the length of Ophiuchus huge
In th' arctic sky, and from his horrid hair 710

Shakes pestilence and war. Each at the head
Levell'd his deadly aim; their fatal hands
No second stroke intend; and such a frown
Each cast at th' other, as when two black clouds,
With heav'n's artillery fraught, come rattling on 715

Over the Caspian, then stand front to front,
Hovering a pace, till winds the signal blow
To join their dark encounter in mid air:
So frown'd the mighty combatants, that hell
Grew darker at their frown; so match'd they stood;
For never but once more was either like 721

To meet so great a foe: and now great deeds
Had been achiev'd, whereof all hell had rung,
Had not the snaky forcerers that sat
Fast by hell-gate, and kept the fatal key, 725

Ris'n, and with hideous outcry, rush'd between.

O father, what intends thy hand, the cri'd,
'Gainst thy only son? What fury, O son,

Possesses thee, to bend that mortal dart
 Against thy father's head? and know't for whom; 730
 For him who sits above, and laughs the while
 At thee, ordain'd his drudge, to execute
 What'er his wrath, which he calls justice, bids;
 His wrath, which one day will destroy ye both.

She spake, and as her words the hellish pest 735
 Forbore; then these to her Satan return'd.

So strange thy outcry, and thy words so strange
 Thou interpos'st, that my sudden hand
 Prevented, spares to tell thee yet by deeds
 What it intends; till first I know of thee, 740

What thing-thou art, thus double-form'd; and why,

In this infernal vale first met, thou call'st

Me father, and that phantasm call'st my son:

I know thee not, nor ever saw till now

Sight more detestable than him and thee. 745

T' whom thus the portress of hell gate repli'd.

Hast thou forgot me then, and do I seem

Now in thine eye so foul? once deem'd so fair

In heav'n, when at th' Assembly, and in sight

Of all the Seraphim with thee combin'd 750

In bold conspiracy against heav'n's King,

All on a sudden miserable pain

Surpris'd thee, dim thine eyes, and dizzy swam

In darkness, while thy head flames thick and fast

Threw forth; till on the left side op'ning wide, 755

Likest to thee in shape and count'nance bright,

Then shining heav'nly fair, a godd'ss arm'd,

Out of thy head I sprung: amazement seiz'd

All th' host of heav'n; back they recoil'd, afraid

At first, and call'd me Sin, and for a sign 760

Portentous held me; but familiar grown,

I pleas'd, and with attractive graces won

The most averse, thee chiefly, who full oft

Thyself in me thy perfect image viewing,

Becam'st enamour'd, and such joy thou took'st 765

With me in secret, that my womb conceiv'd

A growing burden. Mean while war arose,

And fields were fought in heav'n; wherein remain'd

(For what could else?) to our Almighty Foe

Clear victory; to our part loss and rout, 770

Through all the empyréan, down they fell,
 Driv'n headlong from the pitch of heav'n, down
 Into this deep ; and in the general fall
 I also ; at which time this powerful key
 Into my hand was giv'n, with charge to keep 775
 These gates for ever shut, which none can pass
 Without my opening. Pensive here I sat
 Alone ; but long I sat not, till my womb
 Pregnant by thee, and now excessive grown,
 Prodigious motion felt, and rueful throes. 780
 At last this odious offspring whom thou see'st,
 Thine own begotten, breaking violent way
 Tore through my entrails, that with fear and pain
 Distorted, all my nether shape thus grew
 Transform'd : but he my inbred enemy 785
 Forth issu'd, brandishing his fatal dart
 Made to destroy : I fled, and cri'd out, Death ;
 Hell trembled at the hideous name, and sigh'd
 From all her caves, and back resounded, Death.
 I fled ; but he pursu'd, (though more it seems 790
 Inflamm'd with lust than rage,) and, swifter far,
 Me overtook, his mother, all dismay'd,
 And in embraces forcible and foul
 Engend'ring with me, of that rape begot
 These yelling monsters, that with ceaseless cry 795
 Surround me, as thou saw'st, hourly conceiv'd
 And hourly born, with sorrow infinite
 To me ; for when they list, into the womb
 That bred them they return, and howl, and gnaw
 My bowels, their repast ; then bursting forth 800
 Afresh with conscious terrors vex me round,
 That rest or intermission none I find.
 Before mine eyes in opposition sits
 Grim Death, my son and foe : who set them on,
 And me his parent would full soon devour 805
 For want of other prey, but that he knows
 His end with mine involv'd ; and knows that I
 Should prove a bitter morsel, and his bane,
 Whenever that shall be ; so Fate pronounc'd.
 But thou, O father, I forewarn thee, shun 810
*His deadly arrow ; neither vainly hope
 To be invulnerable in those bright arms,*

Though temper'd heav'nly ; for that mortal dint,
Save he who reigns above, none can resist.

She finish'd ; and the subtle fiend his lore 815
Soon learn'd, now milder, and thus answer'd smooth.

Dear Daughter, since thou claim'st me for thy sire,
And my fair son here show'st me, the dear pledge
Of dalliance had with thee in heav'n, and joys
Then sweet, now sad to mention, though dire change
Be fall'n us, unforeseen, unthought of ; know 821
I come no enemy, but to set free

From out this dark and dismal house of pain
Both him and thee, and all the heav'nly host
Of sp'rits, that, in our just pretences arm'd, 825
Fell with us from on high : from them I go

This uncouth errand sole ; and one for all
Myself expose, with lonely steps to tread
Th' unfounded deep, and through the void immense
To search with wand'ring quest a place foretold 830
Should be, and by concurring signs, ere now

Created, vast and round ; a place of birth
In the purlieus of heav'n, and therein plac'd
A race of upstart creatures, to supply

Perhaps our vacant room ; though more remov'd, 835
Left heav'n furcharg'd with potent multitude
Might hap to move new broils. Be this, or ought
Than this more secret, now design'd, I haste
To know ; and this once known, shall soon return,
And bring ye to the place where thou and Death 840
Shall dwell at ease, and up and down unseen

Wing silently the buxom air, embalm'd
With odours ; there ye shall be fed and fill'd
Immeasurably, all things shall be your prey.

He ceas'd ; for both seem'd highly pleas'd, and Death
Grinn'd horrible a ghastly smile, to hear 846
His famine should be fill'd ; and bless'd his maw
Destin'd to that good hour : no less rejoic'd
His mother bad, and thus bespake her fire.

The key of this infernal pit by due, 850
And by command of heav'n's all-pow'rful King,

I keep, by him forbidden to unlock
These adamant gates ; against all force
Death ready stands to enterpose his dart,

Fearless to be o'ermatch'd by living might. 855
 But what owe I to his commands above
 Who hates me, and hath hither thrust me down
 Into this gloom of Tartarus profound,
 To sit in hateful office here confin'd,
 Inhabitant of heav'n, and heav'nly born, 860
 Here in perpetual agony and pain,
 With terrors and with clamours compass'd round,
 Of mine own brood, that on my bowels feed?
 Thou art my father, thou my author, thou
 My being gav'st me; whom should I obey 865
 But thee? whom follow? thou wilt bring me soon
 To that new world of light and bliss, among
 The gods who live at ease, where I shall reign
 At thy right hand volupt'ous, as befits
 Thy daughter and thy darling, without end. 870
 Thus saying, from her side the fatal key,
 Sad instrument of all our woe, she took;
 And tow'ards the gate rolling her bestial train,
 Forthwith the huge portcullis high updrew;
 Which but herself, not all the Stygian powers 875
 Could once have mov'd; then in the key-hole turns
 Th' intricate wards, and ev'ry bolt and bar
 Of massy ir'on or solid rock with ease
 Unfastens; on a sudden open fly,
 With impetuous recoil and jarring sound, 880
 Th' infernal doors, and on their hinges grate
 Harsh thunder, that the lowest bottom shook
 Of Erebus. She open'd, but to shut
 Excell'd her pow'r: the gates wide open stood,
 That with extended wings a banner'd host 885
 Under spread ensigns marching, might pass through
 With horse and chariots rank'd in loose array;
 So wide they stood, and like a furnace-mouth
 Cast forth redounding smoke and ruddy flame.
 Before their eyes in sudden view appear 890
 The secrets of the hoary deep; a dark
 Unlimitable ocean, without bound,
 Without dimension, where length, breadth, and height,
 And time, and place are lost; where eldest Night
 And Chaos, ancestors of Nature, hold 895
 Eternal anarchy, amidst the noise

Of endless wars, and by confusion stand.
 For hot, cold, moist, and dry, four champions fierce,
 Strive here for mastery, and to battle bring
 Their embryon atoms; they around the flag 900
 Of each his faction, in their several clans,
 Light arm'd or heavy, sharp, smooth, swift, or slow,
 Swarm populous, unnumber'd as the sands
 Of Barca or Cyrene's torrid soil,
 Levied to side with warring winds, and poise 905
 Their lighter wings. To whom these most adhere,
 He rules a moment: Chaos umpire sits,
 And by decision more embroils the fray,
 By which he reigns: next him high arbiter
 Chance governs all. Into his wild abyss, 910
 The womb of nature, and perhaps her grave,
 Of neither sea, nor shore, nor air, nor fire,
 But all these in their pregnant causes mix'd
 Confus'dly, and which thus must ever fight,
 Unless th' Almighty Maker them ordain 915
 His dark materials to create more worlds;
 Into this wild abyss the wary fiend
 Stood on the brink of hell, and look'd a while,
 Pond'ring his voyage; for no narrow frith
 He had to cross. Nor was his ear less peal'd 920
 With noises loud and ruinous, (to compare
 Great things with small), than when Bellona storms,
 With all her batt'ring engines bent to raise
 Some capital city; or less than if this frame
 Of heav'n were falling, and these elements 925
 In mutiny had from her axle torn
 The steadfast earth. At last his sail-broad vans
 He spreads for flight, and in the surging smoke
 Uplifted spurns the ground; thence many a league,
 As in a cloudy chair, ascending rides 930
 Audacious; but that seat soon failing, meets
 A vast vacuity: all unawares
 Flutt'ring his pinions vain, plumb down he drops
 Ten thousand fathom deep; and to this hour
 Down had been falling, had not by ill chance 935
 The strong rebuff of some tumult'ous cloud,
 Instinct with fire and nitre, hurried him
 As many miles aloft: that fury staid,

Quench'd in a boggy Syrtis, neither sea,
 Nor good dry land : nigh founder'd. on he fares, 940
 Treading the crude consistence, half on foot,
 Half fly'ing ; behoves him now both oar and sail.
 As when a gryphon, through the wilderness
 With winged course, o'er hill or moory dale,
 Pursues the Arimaspien, who by stealth 945
 Had from his wakeful custody purloin'd
 The guarded gold : so eagerly the fiend
 O'er bog, or steep, through strait, rough, dense, or rare,
 With head, hands, wings, or feet, pursues his way ;
 And swims, or sinks, or wades, or creeps, or flies. 950
 At length an universal hubbub wild
 Of stunning sounds, and voices all confus'd,
 Borne through the hollow dark, assaults his ear,
 With loudest vehemence : thither he plies,
 Undaunted to meet there whatever power 955
 Or spirit of the nethermost abyss
 Might in that noise reside. whom to ask
 Which way the nearest coast of darkness lies
 Bord'ring on light ; when straight behold the throne
 Of Chaos, and his dark pavilion spread 960
 Wide on the wasteful deep ; with him enthron'd
 Sat sable-vested Night, eldest of things,
 The consort of his reign ; and by them stood
 Orcus and Ades, and the dreadful name
 Of Demogorgon ; Rumor next, and Chance 965
 And Tumult, and Confusion all embroil'd,
 And Discord with a thousand various mouths.
 To whom Satan turning boldly, thus. Ye pow'rs
 And spirits of this nethermost abyss,
 Chaos and ancient Night, I come no spy 970
 With purpose to explore or to disturb
 The secrets of your realm ; but by constraint
 Wand'ring this darksome desert, as my way
 Lies through your spacious empire up to light
 Alone, and without guide. half lost, I seek 975
 What readiest path leads where your gloomy bounds
 Confine with heav'n ; or if some other place,
 From your dominion won, th' ethereal King
 Possesses lately, thither to arrive
 I travel this profound ; direct my course : 980

Directed, no mean recompense it brings
 To your behoof; if I that region lost,
 All usurpation thence expell'd, reduce
 To her original darkness, and your sway,
 (Which is my present journey), and once more 985
 Erect the standard there of ancient Night;
 Yours be th' advantage all, mine the revenge.
 Thus Satan; and him thus the anarch old,
 With falt'ring speech and visage uncompos'd,
 Answer'd. I know thee, stranger, who thou art, 990
 That mighty leading angel, who of late
 Made head against heav'n's King, though overthrown.
 I saw, and heard; for such a numerous host
 Fled not in silence through the frighted deep,
 With ruin upon ruin, rout on rout, 995
 Confusion worse confounded; and heav'n-gates
 Pour'd out by millions her victorious bands
 Pursuing. I upon my frontiers here
 Keep residence; if all I can will serve
 That little which is left so to defend, 1000
 Encroach'd on still through your intestine broils
 Weak'ning the sceptre of old Night; first hell,
 Your dungeon, stretching far and wide beneath;
 Now lately heav'n and earth, another world,
 Hung o'er my realm, linked in a golden chain, 1005
 To that side heav'n, from whence your legions fell:
 If that way be your walk, you have not far:
 So much the nearer danger; go, and speed;
 Havock, and spoil, and ruin, are my gain.
 He ceas'd; and Satan stay'd not to reply, 1010
 But glad that now his sea should find a shore,
 With fresh alacrity, and force renew'd,
 Springs upward, like a pyramid of fire
 Into the wild expanse; and through the shock
 Of fighting elements, on all sides round 1015
 Environ'd, wins his way; harrier beset
 And more endanger'd, than when Argo pass'd
 Through Bosphorus, betwixt the jutting rocks:
 Or when Ulysses on the larboard shunn'd
 Charybdis, and by th' other whirlpool steer'd. 1020
So he with difficulty and labour hard

Mov'd on ; with difficulty and labour he ;
 But he once pass'd, soon after, when man fell,
 Strange alteration ! Sin and Death remain
 Following his tract, such was the will of Heav'n, 1025
 Pass'd after him a broad and beaten way
 Over the dark abyss, whose boiling gulf
 Tamely endur'd a bridge of wondrous length,
 From hell continu'd, reaching th' utmost orb
 Of this frail world ; by which the spirits perverse 1030
 With easy intercourse to and fro,
 To tempt or punish mortals, except whom
 God and good Angels guard by special grace.
 But now at last the sacred influence
 Of light appears, and from the walls of heav'n 1035
 Shoots far into the bosom of dim Night
 A glimm'ring dawn : here Nature first begins
 Her farthest verge, and Chaos to retire,
 As from her utmost works a broken foe,
 With tumult less, and with less hostile din ; 1040
 That Satan with less toil, and now with ease,
 Wafts on the calmer wave by dubious light,
 And like a weather-beaten vessel holds
 Gladly the port, though shrouds and tackle torn ;
 Or in the emptier waste, resembling air, 1045
 Weighs his spread wings, at leisure to behold
 Far off th' empyreal heav'n, extended wide
 In circuit, undetermin'd square or round,
 With opal tow'rs, and battlements adorn'd
 Of living saphir, once his native seat ; 1050
 And fast by, hanging in a golden chain,
 This pendent world, in bigness as a star
 Of smallest magnitude, close by the moon.
 Thither full fraught with mischievous revenge,
 Accurs'd, and in a curst hour, he hies. 1055

END OF THE SECOND BOOK.

PARADISE LOST.

B O O K III.

THE ARGUMENT.

God sitting on his throne sees Satan flying towards this world, then newly created; shews him to the Son who sat at his right hand; foretels the success of Satan in perverting mankind; clears his own justice and wisdom from all imputation, having created man free, and able enough to have withstood his tempter; yet declares his purpose of grace towards him, in regard he fell not of his own malice, as did Satan, but by him seduced. The Son of God renders praises to his Father for the manifestation of his gracious purpose towards him: but God again declares, that grace cannot be extended towards man without the satisfaction of divine justice. Man hath offended the majesty of God by aspiring to Godhead; and therefore with all his progeny, devoted to death, must die, unless some one can be found sufficient to answer for his offence, and undergo his punishment. The Son of God freely offers himself a ransom for man: the Father accepts him, ordains his incarnation, pronounces his exaltation above all names in heaven and earth; commands all the angels to adore him: they obey; and hymning to their harps in full quire, celebrate the Father and the Son. Mean while Satan alights upon the bare convex of this world's outermost orb; where wandering he first finds a place, since called the limbo of vanity: what persons and things fly up thither: thence comes to the gate of heaven, described ascending by stairs, and the waters above the firmament that flow about it: his passage thence to the orb of the sun; he finds there Uviel, the

regent of that orb, but first changes himself into the shape of a meaner angel; and pretending a zealous desire to behold the new creation, and man whom God had placed here, inquires of him the place of his habitation and is directed: alights first on mount Niphates.

HA I L, holy light, offspring of heav'n first-born
 Or of th' Eternal coeternal beam!
 May I express thee' unblam'd? since God is light,
 And never but in unapproach'd light
 Dwelt from eternity; dwelt then in thee,
 Bright effluence of bright essence increate.
 Or hear'st thou rather pure ethereal stream,
 Whose fountain who shall tell? Before the sun,
 Before the heav'ns thou wert, and at the voice
 Of God, as with a mantle didst invest
 The rising world of waters dark and deep,
 Won from the void and formless infinite.
 Thee I revisit now with bolder wing,
 Escap'd the Stygian pool, though long detain'd
 In that obscure sojourn; while in my flight
 Through utter and through middle darkness borne
 With other notes than to th' Orphean lyre,
 I sung of Chaos and eternal Night;
 Taught by the heav'nly Muse to venture down
 The dark descent, and up to re-ascend,
 Though hard and rare. Thee I revisit safe,
 And feel thy sov'reign vital lamp; but thou
 Revisit'st not these eyes, that roll in vain
 To find thy piercing ray, and find no dawn;
 So thick a drop serene hath quench'd their orbs,
 Or dim suffusion veil'd. Yet not the more
 Cease I to wander, where the Muses haunt
 Clear spring, or shady grove, or sunny hill,
 Smit with the love of sacred song; but chief
 Thee, Sion, and the flow'ry brooks beneath,
 That wash thy hallow'd feet, and warb'ling flow,
 Nightly I visit: nor sometimes forget
 Those other two equal'd with me in fate,
 So were I equal'd with them in renown,
 Blind Thamyras, and blind Mæonides;

And Tiresias, and Phineus, prophets old :
 Then feed on thoughts, that voluntary move
 Harmonious numbers ; as the wakeful bird
 Sings darkling, and in shadieft covert hid
 Tunes her nocturnal note. Thus with the year 40
 Seasons return ; but not to me returns
 Day, or the sweet approach of ev'n or morn,
 Or sight of vernal bloom, or summer's rose,
 Or flocks, or herds, or human face divine ;
 But cloud instead, and ever during dark 45
 Surrounds me, from the chearful ways of men
 Cut off, and for the book of knowledge fair
 Presented with an universal blank
 Of nature's works, to me expung'd and raz'd,
 And wisdom at one entrance quite shut out. 50
 So much the rather thou, celestial light,
 Shine inward, and the mind through all her powers
 Irradiate, there plant eyes, all mist from thence
 Purge and disperse, that I may see and tell
 Of things invisible to mortal sight. 55
 Now, had th' almighty Father from above,
 From the pure empyrean where he sits
 High thron'd above all height, bent down his eye,
 His own works and their works at once to view :
 About him all the sanctities of heav'n 60
 Stood thick as stars, and from his sight receiv'd
 Beatitude past utterance : on his right
 The radiant image of his glory sat,
 His only Son. On earth he first beheld
 Our two first parents, yet the only two 65
 Of mankind, in the happy garden plac'd,
 Reaping immortal fruits of joy and love,
 Uninterrupted joy, unrival'd love,
 In blisful solitude. He then survey'd
 Hell and the gulf between, and Satan there 70
 Coasting the wall of heav'n on this side night,
 In the dun air sublime ; and ready now
 To stoop with wearied wings and willing feet
 On the bare outside of this world, that seem'd
 Firm land imbosom'd without firmament ;
 Uncertain which, in ocean or in air. 75

Him God beholding from his prospect high,
Wherein past, present, future, he beholds,
Thus to his only Son, foreseeing spake.

Only begotten Son, see'st thou what rage 80
Transports our adversary; whom no bounds
Prescrib'd, no bars of hell, nor all the chains
Heap'd on him there, nor yet the main abyfs
Wide interrupt, can hold; so bent he seems
On desperate revenge, that shall redound 85
Upon his own rebellious head? And now
Through all restraint broke loose, he wings his way
Not far off heav'n, in the precincts of light,
Directly tow'ards the new-created world,
And man there plac'd, with purpose to essay 90
If him by force he can destroy, or worse
By some false guile pervert: and shall pervert;
For man will hearken to his glozing lies,
And easily transgress the sole command,
Sole pledge of his obedience: so will fall, 95
He, and his faithless progeny. Whose fault?
Whose but his own? Ingrate, he had of me
All he could have, I made him just and right,
Sufficient to have stood, though free to fall.
Such I created all th' ethereal powers 100
And sp'rits, both them who stood, and them who fail'd;
Freely they stood who stood, and fell who fell;
Not free, what proof could they have giv'n sincere
Of true allegiance, constant faith or love,
Where only what they needs must do appear'd, 105
Not what they would? what praise could they receive?
What pleasure I from such obedience paid,
When will and reason (reas'n also is choice)
Useless and vain, of freedom both despoil'd,
Made passive both, had serv'd necessity, 110
Not me? They, therefore, as to right belong'd,
So were created, nor can justly' accuse
Their Maker, or their making, or their fate,
As if predestination over-rul'd
Their will, dispos'd by absolute decree, 115
Or high foreknowledge. They themselves decreed
Their own revolt, not I; if I foreknew,

Foreknowledge had no influence on their fault,
 Which had no less prov'd certain unforeseen,
 So without least impulse or shadow' of fate, 120
 Or ought by me immutably foreseen,
 They trespass, authors to themselves in all,
 Both what they judge, and what they chuse; for so
 I form'd them free: and free they must remain,
 Till they int'ral themselves; I elsè most charge: 125
 Their nature, and revoke the high decree
 Unchangeable, eternal, which ordain'd
 Their freedom; they themselves ordain'd their fall.
 The first sort by their own suggestion fell,
 Self-tempted, self-deprav'd: man falls, deceiv'd 130
 By th' other first: man therefore shall find grace,
 Th' other none: in mercy' and justice both,
 Through heav'n and earth, so shall my glory' excel;
 But mercy, first and last, shall brightest shine.

Thus while God spake, ambrosial fragrance fill'd
 All heav'n, and in the blessed sp'rits elect 136
 Sense of new joy ineffable diffus'd.
 Beyond compare the Son of God was seen
 Most glorious; in him all the Father thence
 Substantially express'd: and in his face 140
 Divine compassion visible appear'd,
 Love without end, and without measure grace,
 Which uttering, thus he to his Father spake.

O Father, gracious was that word which clos'd
 Thy sov'reign sentence, that man should find grace; 145
 For which both heav'n and earth shall high extol
 Thy praises, with th' innumerable sound
 Of hymns and sacred songs, wherewith thy throne
 Incompass'd shall resound thee ever bless'd.
 For should man finally be lost? should man, 150
 Thy creature late so lov'd, thy youngest son,
 Fall circumvented thus by fraud, though join'd
 With his own folly? that be from thee far,
 That far be from thee, Father, who art judge
 Of all things made, and judgest only right. 155
 Or shall the adversary thus obtain
 His end, and frustrate thine? shall he fulfil
His malice, and thy goodness bring to naught,

Or proud return, though to his heavier doom,
 Yet with revenge accomplish'd, and to hell 160
 Drawn after him the whole race of mankind,
 By him corrupted? or wilt thou thyself
 Abolish thy creation, and unmake
 For him, what for thy glory thou hast made?
 So should thy goodness and thy greatness both 165
 Be question'd and blasphem'd without defence.
 To whom the Great Creator thus reply'd.
 O Son, in whom my soul hath chief delight,
 Son of my bosom, Son who art alone
 My word, my wisdom, and effectual might, 170
 All hast thou spoken as my thoughts are, all
 As my eternal purpose hath decreed.
 Man shall not quite be lost, but fav'd who will;
 Yet not of will in him, but grace in me
 Freely vouchsaf'd: once more I will renew 175
 His laps'd pow'rs, though forfeit, and inthrall'd
 By sin to foul exorbitant desires;
 Upheld by me, yet once more he shall stand
 On even ground against his mortal foe;
 By me upheld, that he may know how frail 180
 His fall'n condition is, and to me owe
 All his deliv'rance, and to none but me.
 Some I have chosen of peculiar grace,
 Elect above the rest; so is my will:
 The east shall hear my call, and oft be warn'd 185
 Their sinful state, and to appease betimes
 Th' incens'd Deity, while offer'd grace
 Invites; for I will clear their senses dark,
 What may suffice, and soften stony hearts
 To pray, repent, and bring obedience due. 190
 To pray'r, repentance, and obedience due,
 Though but endeavour'd with sincere intent,
 Mine ear shall not be slow, mine eye not shut.
 And I will place within them as a guide,
 My umpire Conscience; whom if they will hear, 195
 Light after light, well us'd, they shall attain,
 And to the end persisting, safe arrive.
*This my long suff'rance, and my day of grace,
 They who neglect and scorn, shall never taste;*

But hard be harden'd ; blind be blinded more, 200
 That they may stumble on, and deeper fall :
 And none but such from mercy I exclude.
 But yet all is not done ; man disobeying
 Disloyal breaks his fealty, and sins
 Against the high supremacy of heav'n, 205
 Affecting godhead, and so losing all,
 To expiate his treason hath naught left ;
 But to destruction sacred and devots,
 He, with his whole posterity, must die ;
 Die he, or justice must ; unless for him 210
 Some other able, and as willing pay
 The rigid satisfaction, death for death.
 Say, heav'nly pow'rs, where shall we find such love ?
 Which of ye will be mortal, to redeem
 Man's mortal crime, and just th' unjust to save ? 215
 Dwells in all heaven charity so dear ?
 He ask'd ; but all the heav'nly quire stood mute,
 And silence was in heav'n : on man's behalf
 Patron or intercessor none appear'd,
 Much less that durst upon his own head draw 220
 The deadly forfeiture, and ransom set.
 And now without redemption all mankind
 Must have been lost, adjudg'd to death and hell
 By doom severe, had not the Son of God,
 In whom the fulness dwells of love divine, 225
 His dearest mediation thus renew'd.
 Father, thy word is past, man shall find grace ;
 And shall grace not find means, that finds her way,
 The speediest of thy winged messengers,
 To visit all thy creatures, and to all 230
 Comes unprevented, unimplor'd, unfought ?
 Happy for man, so coming : he her aid
 Can never seek, once dead in sins, and lost ;
 Atonement for himself, or offering meet,
 Indebted and undone, hath none to bring. 235
 Behold me then ; me for him, life for life
 I offer ; on me let thine anger fall :
 Account me man ; I for his sake will leave
 Thy bosom, and his glory next to thee
 Freely put off, and for him lastly die 240

Well pleas'd : on me let Death wreak all his rage :
 Under his gloomy pow'r I shall not long
 Lie vanquish'd ; thou hast giv'n me to possess
 Life in myself for ever ; by thee I live,
 Though now to Death I yield, and am his due 245
 All that of me can die ; yet, that debt paid,
 Thou wilt not leave me in the loathsome grave
 His prey, nor suffer my unspotted soul
 For ever with corruption there to dwell ;
 But I shall rise victorious, and subdued 250
 My vanquisher, spoil'd of his vaunted spoil ;
 Death his death's wound shall then receive, and stoop
 Inglorious, of his mortal sting disarm'd.
 I through the ample air, in triumph high
 Shall lead hell captive, maugre hell, and shew 255
 The pow'rs of darkness bound. Thou at the sight
 Pleas'd, out of heaven shalt look down, and smile ;
 While, by thee rais'd, I ruin all my foes,
 Death last, and with his carcase glut the grave ;
 Then, with the multitude of my redeem'd 260
 Shall enter heav'n, long absent, and return,
 Father, to see thy face, wherein no cloud
 Of anger shall remain, but peace assur'd,
 And reconciliation ; wrath shall be no more
 Thenceforth, but in thy presence joy entire. 265
 His words here ended, but his meek aspect
 Silent yet spake, and breath'd immortal love
 To mortal men, above which only shone
 Filial obedience : as a sacrifice
 Glad to be offer'd, he attends the will 270
 Of his great Father. Admiration seiz'd
 All heav'n, what this might mean, and whither tend
 Wond'ring ; but soon th' Almighty thus reply'd.
 O thou in heav'n and earth the only peace
 Found out for mankind under wrath ! O thou 275
 My soul complacence ! well thou know'st how dear
 To me are all my works ; nor man the least,
 Though last created ; that for him I spare
 Thee from my bosom and right hand, to save,
 By losing thee a while, the whole race lost. 280
 Thou therefore, whom thou only canst redeem,

Their nature also to thy nature join :
 And be thyself man among men on earth,
 Made flesh, when time, of virgin seed,
 By wondrous birth : be thou in Adam's room 285
 The head of all mankind, though Adam's son.
 As in him perish all men, so in thee,
 As from a second root, shall be restor'd
 As many as are restor'd, without thee none.
 His crime makes guilty all his sons ; thy merit 290
 Imputed shall absolve them who renounce
 Their own both righteous and unrighteous deeds,
 And live in thee transplanted, and from thee
 Receive new life. So man, as is most just,
 Shall satisfy for man, be judg'd, and die, 295
 And dying rise, and rising with him raise
 His brethren, ransom'd with his own dear life.
 So heav'nly love shall outdo hellish hate,
 Giving to death, and dying to redeem,
 So dearly to redeem, what hellish hate 300
 So easily destroy'd, and still destroys
 In those who, when they may, accept not grace.
 Nor shalt thou, by descending to assume
 Man's nature, lessen or degrade thine own.
 Because thou hast, though thron'd in highest bliss, 305
 Equal to God and equally enjoying
 God-like fruition, quitted all, to save
 A world from utter loss, and hast been found
 By merit more than birthright Son of God,
 Found worthiest to be so by being good, 310
 Far more than great or high ; because in thee
 Love hath abounded more than glory' abounds ;
 Therefore thy humiliation shall exalt
 With thee thy manhood also to this throne ;
 Here shalt thou sit incarnate. here shalt reign 315
 Both God and man, Son both of God and man,
 Anointed universal KING : all power
 I give thee ; reign for ever, and assume
 Thy merits ; under thee, as head supreme,
 Thrones, principedoms, pow'rs, dominions, I reduce :
 All knees to thee shall bow, of them that bide 321
 In heav'n, or earth, or under earth in hell.

When thou attended gloriously from heav'n
 Shalt in the sky appear, and from thee send
 The summoning archangels to proclaim
 Thy dread tribunal; forthwith from all winds,
 The living, and forthwith the cited dead
 Of all past ages, to the general doom
 Shall hasten; such a peal shall rouse their sleep.
 Then all thy faints assembled, thou shalt judge
 Bad men and angels; they arraign'd shall sink
 Beneath thy sentence; hell, her numbers full,
 Thenceforth shall be forever shut. Mean while
 The world shall burn, and from her ashes spring
 New heav'n and earth, wherein the just shall dwell
 And after all their tribulations long,
 See golden days, fruitful of golden deeds,
 With joy and love triumphing, and fair truth.
 Then thou thy regal sceptre shalt lay by,
 For regal sceptre then no more shall need,
 God shall be all in all. But all ye gods
 Adore him, who to compass all this, dies;
 Adore the Son, and honour him as me.

No sooner had th' Almighty ceas'd, but all
 The multitude of Angels, with a shout
 Loud as from numbers without number, sweet
 As from bleis'd voices, uttering joy, heav'n rung
 With jubilee, and loud hosannas fill'd
 Th' eternal regions. Lowly reverent,
 Tow'ards either throne thy bow, and to the grove
 With solemn adoration down they cast
 Their crowns, inwove with amarant and gold;
 Immortal amarant, a flow'r which once
 In Paradise, fast by the tree of life,
 Began to bloom; but soon for man's offence
 To heav'n remov'd, where first it grew, there grew
 And flow'rs aloft shading the fount of life,
 And where the river of blis through midst of hea
 Rolls o'er Elyfian flow'rs her amber stream:
 With these that never fade, the sp'rits elect
 Bind their replendent locks, inwreath'd with bear
*Now in loose garlands thick thrown off, the bright
 Pavement, that like a sea of jasper shone,*

pled with celestial roses smil'd.
 crown'd again, their golden harps they took;
 ever tun'd, that glittering by their side 366
 uivers hung, and with preamble sweet
 rming symphony they introduce
 sacred song, and waken raptures high;
 ce exempt, no voice but well could join 370
 ous part, such concord is in heav'n,
 e, Father, first they sung omnipotent,
 able, immortal, infinite,
 I KING; thee, author of all being,
 in of light, thyself invisible 375
 t the glorious brightness where thou sitt'st
 'd inaccessible, but when thou shad'st
 ill blaze of thy beams, and through a cloud
 a round above thee like a radiant shrine
 with excessive bright thy skirts appear; 380
 zzle heav'n, that brightest Seraphim
 ach not, but with both wings veil their eyes.
 ext they sang of all creation first,
 ten Son, divine similitude,
 se conspicuous count'nance, without cloud 385
 visible, th' Almighty Father shines,
 else no creature can behold; on thee
 s'd th' effulgence of his glory' abides,
 us'd on thee his ample Spirit rests.
 av'n of heav'ns, and all the pow'rs therein, 390
 e created; and by thee threw down
 piring domination: thou that day
 ather's dreadful thunder didst not spare,
 p thy flaming chariot-wheels, that shook
 r's everlasting frame, while o'er the necks 395
 drov'st of warring angels difarray'd.
 rom pursuit thy pow'rs with loud acclaim
 nly extoll'd, Son of thy Father's might,
 cute fierce vengeance on his foes.
 on man: him through their malice fall'n, 400
 of mercy' and grace, thou didst not doom
 stly, but much more to pity inclin'd:
 mer did thy dear and only Son
 e thee purpos'd not to doom frail man

A violent cross wind from either coast
 Blows them transverse, ten thousand leagues awry
 Into the devious air : then might ye see
 Cows, hoods, and habits, with their wearers, tost,
 And flutter'd into rags ; then relics, beads, 491
 Indulgences, dispenses, pardons, bulls,
 The sport of winds : all these upwhirl'd aloft
 Fly o'er the backside of the world far off
 Into a limbo large and broad, since call'd 495
 The Paradise of Fools, to few unknown,
 Long after, now unpeopled, and untrod.
 All this dark globe the fiend found as he pass'd ;
 And long he wander'd, till at last a gleam
 Of dawning light turn'd thitherward in haste 500
 His travell'd steps ; far distant he descries,
 Ascending by degrees magnificent
 Up to the wall of heav'n, a structure high ;
 At top whereof, but far more rich, appear'd
 The work as of a kingly palace gate, 505
 With frontispiece of diamond and gold
 Embellish'd : thick with sparkling orient gems
 The portal shone, inimitable on earth
 By model, or by shading pencil drawn.
 The stairs were such as whereon Jacob saw 510
 Angels ascending and descending, bands
 Of guardians bright, when he from Esau fled
 To Padan-Aram, in the field of Luz
 Dreaming by night under the open sky,
 And waking cry'd, This is the gate of heav'n. 515
 Each stair mysteriously was meant, nor stood
 There always, but drawn up to heav'n sometimes
 Viewless ; and underneath a bright sea flow'd
 Of jasper, or of liquid pearl, whereon
 Who after came from earth, sailing arriv'd 520
 Wasted by angels, or flew o'er the lake
 Rapt in a chariot drawn by fiery steeds.
 The stairs were then let down, whether to dare
 Th' fiend by easy ascent, or aggravate
 His sad exclusion from the doors of bliss : 525
*Direct against which open'd from beneath,
 Just o'er the blissful seat of Paradise,*

age down to th' earth, a passage wide,
 by far than that of after times
 nount Sion, and, though that were large 530
 he promis'd land to God so dear ;
 ich, to visit oft those happy tribes,
 h behests, his angels to and fro
 frequent, and his eye with choice regard
 Paneas, the fount of Jordan's flood, 535
 erfaba, where the holy land
 s on Egypt and th' Arabian shore ;
 e the op'ning seem'd, where bounds were set
 knefs, such as bound the ocean wave.
 from hence, now on the lower stair, 540
 cal'd by steps of gold to heaven gate,
 down with wonder at the sudden view
 this world at once. As when a scout
 gh dark and desert ways with peril gone
 ht, at last by break of chearful dawn 545
 s the brow of some high climbing hill,
 to his eye discovers unaware
 odly prospect of some foreign land
 en, or some renown'd metropolis
 glist'ring spires and pinnacles adorn'd, 550
 now the rising sun gilds with his beams :
 onder feiz'd, though after heav'n seen,
 'rit malign, but much more envy feiz'd,
 it of all this world beheld so fair.
 he surveys (and well might, where he stood 555
 h above the circling canopy
 ht's extended shade) from eastern point
 ra, to the fleecy star that bears
 meda far off Atlantic seas,
 l th' horizon ; then from pole to pole 560
 ws in breadth ; and without longer pause
 ight into the world's first region throws
 ght precipitant, and winds with ease
 gh the pure marble air his oblique way,
 3st innumerable stars, that shone 565
 istant, but nigh seem'd other worlds ;
 er worlds they seem'd, or happy isles,
 ose Hesperian gardens fam'd of old.

Fortunate fields, and groves, and flow'ry vales ;
 Thrice happy isles ; but who dwelt happy there 5
 He stay'd not to enquire. Above them all
 The golden sun, in splendour likest heaven,
 Allur'd his eye ; thither his course he bends
 Through the calm firmament, (but up or down,
 By center, or eccentric, hard to tell, 5
 Or longitude), where the great luminary
 Aloof the vulgar constellations thick,
 That from his lordly eye keep distance due,
 Dispenses light from far ; they as they move
 Their starry dance in numbers that compute 5
 Days, months, and years, tow'ards his all-cheering gla
 Turn swift their various motions, or are turn'd
 By his magnetic beam, that gently warms
 The universe, and to each inward part
 With gentle penetration, though unseen, 5
 Shoots invisible virtue ev'n to the deep ;
 So wond'routly was set his station bright.
 There lands the fiend, a spot like which perhaps
 Astronomer in the sun's lucent orb
 Through his glaz'd optic tube yet never saw. 5
 The place he found beyond expression bright,
 Compar'd with ought on earth, metal or stone ;
 Not all parts like, but all alike inform'd
 With radiant light, as glowing ir'on with fire :
 If metal, part seem'd gold, part silver clear ; 5
 If stone, carbuncle most or crysolite,
 Ruby or topaz, to the twelve that shone
 In Aaron's breastplate, and a stone besides
 Imagin'd rather oft than elsewhere seen ;
 That stone, or like to that which here below 6
 Philosophers in vain so long have sought,
 In vain, though by their pow'rful art they bind
 Volatile Hermes, and call up unbound
 In various shapes old Proteus from the sea,
 Drain'd through a limbec to his native form. 6
 What wonder then if fields and regions here
 Breathe forth elixir pure, and rivers run
 Potable gold, when with one virt'ous touch
 Th' arch-chemic sun, so far from us remote,

Produces, with terrestrial humour mix'd, 613
 Here in the dark so many precious things
 Of colour glorious, and effect so rare?
 Here matter new to gaze the devil met
 Undazzled: far and wide his eye commands:
 For light no obstacle found here, nor shade, 615
 But all sun shine, as when his beams at noon
 Culminate from th' equator, as they now
 Shot upward still direct, whence no way round
 Shadow from body' opaque can fall; and th' air,
 No where so clear, sharpen'd his visual ray 620
 To objects distant far, whereby he soon
 Saw within ken a glorious angel stand,
 The same whom John saw also in the sun;
 His back was turn'd, but not his brightneis hid;
 Of beaming sunny rays a golden tiar 625
 Circled his head, nor left his locks behind
 Illustrious on his shoulders sledge with wings
 Lay waving round; on some great charge employ'd
 He seem'd, or fix'd in cogitation deep.
 Glad was the spirit impure, as now in hope 630
 To find who might direct his wand'ring flight
 To paradise, the happy seat of man,
 His journey's end, and our beginning woe.
 But first he casts to change his proper shape,
 Which else might work him danger or delay: 635
 And now a stripling Cherub he appears,
 Not of the prime, yet such as in his face
 Youth smil'd celestial, and to ev'ry limb
 Suitable grace diffus'd, so well he feign'd:
 Under a coronet his flowing hair 640
 In curls on either cheek play'd; wings he wore
 Of many a colour'd plume, sprinkled with gold;
 His habit fit for speed succinct, and held
 Before his decent steps a silver wand.
 He drew not nigh unheard; the angel bright 645
 Ere he drew nigh, his radiant visage turn'd,
 Admonish'd by his ear, and straight was known
 Th' archangel Uriel, one of the seven
 Who in God's presence, nearest to his throne,
 Stand ready at command, and are his eyes 650

That run through all the heav'ns, or down to th' ear
 Bear his swift errands, over moist and dry,
 O'er sea and land : him Satan thus accofts.

Uriel, for thou of those sev'n sp'rits that stand
 In fight of God's high throne, gloriously bright, 6

The first are wont his great authentic will
 Interpreter through highest heav'n to bring,
 Where all his sons thy embassy attend ;
 And here art likeliest by supreme decree
 Like honour to obtain ; and as his eye, 6
 To visit oft this new creation round ;

Unspeakable desire to see, and know
 All these his wondrous works, but chiefly man,
 His chief delight and favour, him for whom
 All these his works so wondrous he ordain'd, 6

Hath brought me from the quires of Cherubim
 Alone thus wand'ring. Brightest seraph, tell
 In which of all these shining orbs hath man
 His fixed seat, or fixed seat hath none,
 But all these shining orbs his choice to dwell ; 6
 That I may find him, and with secret gaze
 Or open admiration him behold,

On whom the great Creator hath bestow'd
 Worlds, and on whom hath all these graces pour'd
 That both in him and all things, as is meet, 6
 The universal Maker we may praise ;
 Who justly hath driv'n out his rebel foes
 To deepest hell, and, to repair that loss,
 Created this new happy race of men
 To serve him better : wise are all his ways. 6

So spake the false dissembler unperceiv'd ;
 For neither man nor angel can discern
 Hypocrisy, the only evil that walks
 Invisible, except to God alone,
 By his permissive will, through heav'n and earth : 6
 And oft though wisdom wake, suspicion sleeps
 At wisdom's gates, and to Simplicity
 Resigns her charge, while goodness thinks no ill
 Where no ill seems, which now for once beguil'd
 Uriel, though regent of the sun, and held 6

The sharpest-sighted sp'rit of all in heav'n ;

Who to the fraudulent impostor foul,
 In his uprightnes answer thus return'd.
 Fair Angel, thy desire which tends to know
 The works of God, thereby to glorify 695
 The great work-matter, leads to no excess
 That reaches blame, but rather merits praise
 The more it seems excess, that led thee hither
 From thy impereal mansion thus alone,
 To witness with thine eyes what some perhaps, 700
 Contented with report, hear only in heav'n :
 For wonderful indeed are all his works,
 Pleasant to know, and worthiest to be all
 Had in remembrance always with delight ;
 But what created mind can comprehend 705
 Their number, or the wisdom infinite
 That brought them forth, but hid their causes deep ?
 I saw when at his word the formless mass,
 This world's material mould, came to a heap :
 Confusion heard his voice, and wild uproar 710
 Stood rul'd, stood vast infinitude confin'd ;
 Till at his second bidding darkness fled,
 Light shone, and order from disorder sprung :
 Swift to their several quarters halted then
 The cumbrous elements, earth, flood, air, fire, 715
 And this ethereal quintessence of heaven
 Flew upward, spirited with various forms,
 That roll'd orbicular, and turn'd to stars
 Numberless, as thou seest, and how they move ;
 Each had his place appointed, each his course ; 720
 The rest in circuit wall this universe.
 Look downward on that globe, whose hither side,
 With light from hence, though but reflected, shines ;
 That place is earth, the seat of man ; that light
 His day, which else, as th' other hemisphere, 725
 Night would invade ; but there the neighb'ring moon
 (So call that opposite fair star) her aid
 Timely' interposes, and her monthly round
 Still ending, still renewing, through mid heav'n,
 With borrow'd light her countenance triform 730
 Hence fills, and empties, to enlighten th' earth,
 And in her pale dominion checks the night.

That spot to which I point is Paradise,
Adam's abode, those lofty shades his bower ;
Thy way thou canst not miss, me mine requires. 735
Thus said, he turn'd ; and Satan bowing low,
As to superior sp'rits is wont in heaven
Where honour due and rev'rence none neglects,
Took leave, and tow'ard the coast of earth beneath,
Down from th' ecliptic, sped with hop'd success, 740
Throws his steep flight in many an airy wheel ;
Nor stay'd, till on Niphates' top he lights.

END OF THE THIRD BOOK.

PARADISE LOST.

B O O K IV.

THE ARGUMENT.

Satan now in prospect of Eden, and nigh the place where he must now attempt the bold enterprise which he undertook alone against God and man, falls into many doubts with himself, and many passions, fear, envy and despair; but at length confirms himself in evil, journeys on to Paradise, whose outward prospect and situation is described, overleaps the bounds, sits in the shape of a cormorant on the tree of life, as highest in the garden, to look about him. The garden described; Satan's first sight of Adam and Eve; his wonder at their excellent form and happy state; but with resolution to work their fall; overhears their discourse, thence gathers that the tree of knowledge was forbidden them to eat of, under penalty of death; and thereon intends to found his temptation, by seducing them to transgress: then leaves them a while, to know further of their state by some other means. Mean while Uriel descending on a sun beam, warns Gabriel, who had in charge the gate of Paradise, that some evil spirit had escaped the deep, and passed at noon by his sphere in the shape of a good angel down to paradise, discovered after by his furious gestures in the mount. Gabriel promises to find him ere morning. Night coming on, Adam and Eve discourse of going to their rest: their bower described; their evening worship. Gabriel drawing forth his bands of night-watch to walk the round of Paradise, appoints two strong angels to Adam's bower, lest the evil spirit should be there doing harm to Adam or Eve sleeping; there they find him at the ear of Eve tempting her in a dream, and bring him, though unwill-

ling, to Gabriel; by whom questioned, he scornfully answers: prepares resistance, but hindered by a sign from heaven, flies out of Paradise.

O For that warning voice, which he who saw
 Th' Apocalyps heard cry in heav'n aloud,
 Then when the Dragon, put to second rout,
 Came furious down to be reveng'd on men,
Woe to th' inhabitants on earth! that now;
 While time was, our first parents had been warn'd.
 The coming of their secret foe, and 'scap'd,
 Haply so 'scap'd his mortal snare: for now
 Satan, now first inflam'd with rage, came down,
 The tempter ere th' accuser of mankind,
 To wreak on innocent frail man his loss
 Of that first battle, and his flight to hell:
 Yet not rejoicing in his speed, though bold,
 Far off, and fearless, nor with cause to boast.
 Begins his dire attempt; which nigh the birth
 Now rolling boils in his tumult'ous breast;
 And like a devilish engine back recoils
 Upon himself: horror and doubt distract
 His troubled thoughts, and from the bottom stir
 The hell within him; for within him hell
 He brings, and round about him, not from hell
 One step, no more than from himself, can fly
 By change of place: now conscience wakes despair,
 That slumber'd; wakes the bitter memory
 Of what he was, what is, and what must be
 Worse; of worse deeds worse sufferings must ensue.
 Sometimes tow'ards Eden, which now in his view
 Lay pleasant, his griev'd look he fixes sad;
 Sometimes tow'ard heav'n and the full-blazing sun,
 Which now sat high in his meridian tower:
 Then much revolving, thus in sighs began.
 O thou that, with surpassing glory crown'd,
 Look'st from thy sole dominion like the god
 Of this new world: at whose sight all the stars
 Hide their diminish'd heads; to thee I call,
 But with no friendly voice, and add thy name,
O sun, to tell thee how I hate thy beams,

ring to my remembrance from that state
 how glorious once above thy sphere ;
 de, and worfe ambition, threw me down, 40
 ig in heav'n againſt heav'n's matchleſs King.
 erefore ! he' deſerv'd no ſuch return
 ne, whom he created what I was,
 bright eminence, and with his good
 ded none ; nor was his ſervice hard. 45
 ould be leſs, than to afford him praiſe,
 ſieſt recompence, and pay him thanks,
 ue ! yet all his good prov'd ill in me,
 ough but malice ; lifted up ſo high
 id ſubjection, and thought one ſtep higher 50
 ſet me high'eſt, and in a moment quit
 bt immense of endleſs gratitude,
 denſome ſtill paying, ſtill to owe,
 ful what from him I ſtill receiv'd ;
 nderſtood not that a grateful mind 55
 ng owes not, but ſtill pays, at once
 ed and diſcharg'd ; what burden then ?
 his pow'rful deſtiny ordain'd
 ne inferior angel, I had ſtood
 appy ; no unbounded hope had rais'd 60
 ion. Yet, why not ? ſome other power
 at might have aſpir'd, and me though mean
 to his part : but other pow'rs as great
 t, but ſtand unſhaken, from within
 n without, to all temptations arm'd. 65
 thou the ſame free will and pow'r to ſtand ?
 adſt. Whom haſt thou then, or what t' accuſe,
 av'n's free love, dealt equally all ?
 n his love accurs'd, ſince love or hate,
 alike, it deals eternal woe. 70
 urs'd be thou ; ſince againſt his thy will
 freely what it now ſo juſtly rues.
 erable ! which way ſhall I fly
 e wrath, and infinite deſpair ?
 way I fly is hell ; myſelf am hell ; 75
 n the loweſt deep, a lower deep
 reat'ning to devour me opens wide,
 ich the hell I ſuffer ſeems a heav'n.

O then at last relent : is there no place
 Left for repentance, none for pardon left ? 80
 None left but by submission ; and that word
 Disdain forbids me, and my dread of shame
 Among the sp'rits beneath, whom I seduc'd
 With other promises, and other vaunts
 Than to submit, boasting I could subdue 85
 Th' Omnipotent. Ay me, they little know
 How dearly I abide that boast so vain,
 Under what torments inwardly I groan,
 While they adore me on the throne of hell,
 With diadem and sceptre high advanc'd, 90
 The lower still I fall, only supreme
 In misery ; such joy ambition finds.
 But say I could repent, and could obtain,
 By act of grace, my former state, how soon
 Would height recal high thoughts, how soon unpay 95
 What feign'd submission swore ? ease would recant
 Vows made in pain, as violent and void
 For never can true reconcilment grow
 Where wounds of deadly hate have pierc'd so deep :
 Which would but lead me to a worse relapse, 100
 And heavier fall : so should I purchase dear
 Short intermission bought with double smart.
 This knows my punisher : therefore as far
 From granting he, as I from begging peace :
 All hope excluded thus, behold instead 105
 Of us outcast, exil'd, his new delight,
 Mankind created, and for him this world.
 So farewell hope, and with hope farewell fear,
 Farewell remorse : all good to me is lost ;
 Evil be thou my good : by thee at least 110
 Divided empire with heav'n's King I hold,
 By thee, and more than half perhaps will reign ;
 As man ere long, and this new world, shall know.

Thus while he spake, each passion dimm'd his face
 Thrice chang'd with pale, ire, envy, and despair ; 115
 Which marr'd his borrow'd visage, and betray'd
 Him counterfeit, if any eye beheld.

For heav'nly minds from such dittempers foul
 Are ever clear. Whereof he soon aware,

turbation smooth'd with outward calm, 120
 of fraud; and was the first
 tis'd falsehood under faintly show,
 lice to conceal, couch'd with revenge.
 ough had practic'd to deceive
 e warn'd, whose eye purfu'd him down 125
 he went, and on th' Assyrian mount
 disfigur'd more than could befall
 rappy fort: his gestures fierce
 'd, and mad demeanour, then alone,
 pos'd, all unobserv'd, unseen 130
 fares, and to the border comes
 where delicious Paradise,
 er, crowns with her inclosure green,
 rural mound, the champain head
 wildernesse, whose hairy sides 135
 ket-overgrown, grotesque and wild,
 ny'd; and over head up grew
 le height of loftiest shade,
 d pine, and fir, and branching palm,
 scene; and as the ranks ascend 140
 ove shade, a woody theatre
 st view. Yet higher than their tops
 'rous wall of Paradise up sprung:
 our general fire gave prospect large
 urther empire neighb'ring round. 145
 er than that wall a circling row
 est trees, loaden with fairest fruit,
 and fruits at once of golden hue,
 l, with gay enamell'd colours mix'd:
 the sun more glad impress'd his beams, 150
 fair ev'ning cloud, or humid bow,
 on hath show'r'd the earth; so lovely seem'd
 skip: and of pure now purer air
 approach, and to the heart inspires
 elight and joy, able to drive 155
 s but despair: now gentle gales,
 their odoriferous wings, dispense
 erfumes, and whisper whence they stole
 lmy spoils. As when to them who sail
 he *Cape of Hope*, and now are past 160

Mozambic, off at sea north-east winds blow
 Sabean odours from the spicy shore
 Of Araby the Blest'd ; with such delay
 Well pleas'd they slack their course, and many a league
 Chear'd with the grateful smell old Ocean smiles: I
 So entertain'd those odorous sweets the fiend,
 Who came their bane; though with them better pleas'd
 Than Asmodeus with the filthy fume
 That drove him, though enamour'd, from the spouse
 Of Tobit's son, and with a vengeance sent I
 From Media post to Egypt, there fast bound.
 Now to th' ascent of that steep savage hill
 Satan had journey'd on, pensive and slow ;
 But further way found none, so thick intwin'd,
 As one continu'd brake, the undergrowth I
 Of shrubs and tangling bushes had perplex'd
 All path of man or beast that pass'd that way.
 One gate there only was, and that look'd east
 On th' other side : which when th' arch felon saw,
 Due entrance he disdain'd, and, in contempt, I
 At one slight bound high overleap'd all bound
 Of hill or highest wall, and sheer within
 Lights on his feet. As when a prowling wolf,
 When hunger drives to seek new haunt for prey,
 Watching where shepherds pen their flocks at eve I
 In hurled cotes amid the field secure,
 Leaps o'er the fence with ease into the fold :
 Or as a thief, bent to unhoard the cash
 Of some rich burgher, whose substantial doors,
 Cross-barr'd and bolted fast, fear no assault, I
 In at the window climbs, or o'er the tiles :
 So clamb this first grand thief into God's fold ;
 So since into his church lewd hirelings climb.
 Thence up he flew, and on the tree of life,
 The middle tree, and highest there that grew, I
 Sat like a cormorant ; yet not true life,
 Thereby regain'd, but sad devising death
 To them who liv'd ; nor on the virtue thought
 Of that life-giving plant, but only us'd
 For prospect, what well-us'd had been the pledge I
 Of immortality. So little knows

God alone, to value right
 before him, but perverts best things
 abuse, or to their meanest use.
 him with new wonder now he views, 205
 light of human sense expos'd,
 y room, nature's whole wealth, yea, more,
 on earth: for blissful Paradise
 he garden was, by him in th' east
 planted; Eden stretch'd her line 210
 iran eastward to the royal towers
 Seleucia, built by Grecian kings,
 : the sons of Eden long before
 Telassar: in this pleasant soil
 more pleasant garden God ordain'd; 215
 ie fertile ground he caus'd to grow
 of noblest kind for sight, smell, taste;
 amid them stood the tree of life,
 inent, blooming ambrosial fruit
 able gold: and next to life, 220
 h, the tree of knowledge, grew fast by;
 ge of good bought dear by knowing ill.
 rd through Eden went a river large,
 ig'd his course, but through the shaggy hill
 nderneath ingulf'd; for God had thrown 225
 untain as his garden-mould'd high rais'd
 : rapid current, which through veins
 is earth, with kindly thirst up-drawn,
 resh fountain, and with many a rill
 the garden; thence united fell 230
 e steep glade, and met the nether flood,
 rom his darksome passage now appears;
 v divided into four main streams,
 erse, wand'ring many a famous realm
 ntry, whereof here needs no account; 235
 er to tell how, if art could tell,
 m that sapphir fount the crisped brooks,
 on orient pearl and sands of gold,
 zy error under pendent shades
 ar, visiting each plant, and fed 240
 worthy' of Paradise, which not nice art
 and curious knots, but nature boon

Under a turf of shade that on a green 325
 Stood whisp'ring soft, by a fresh fountain side
 They sat them down ; and after no more toil
 Of their sweet gard'ning labour than suffic'd
 To recommend cool zephyr, and made ease
 More easy, wholesome thirst and appetite 330
 More grateful, to their supper fruits they fell,
 Nectarine fruits which the compliant boughs
 Yielded then, side long as they sat recline
 On the soft downy bank damask'd with flowers ;
 The savoury pulp they chow, and in the rind, 335
 Still as they thirsted, scoop the brimming stream ;
 Nor gently purpose, nor endearing smiles
 Wanted, nor youthful dalliance, as befeems
 Fair couple, link'd in happy nuptial league,
 Alone as they. About them frisking play'd 340
 All beasts of th' earth, since wild, and of all chase
 In wood or wilderness, forest or den ;
 Sporting the lion ramp'd, and in his paw
 Dandled the kid ; bears, tygers, ounces, pards,
 Gambol'd before them ; th' unwieldy elephant, 345
 To make them mirth, us'd all his might, and wreath'd
 His lithe proboscis ; close the serpent fly
 Insinuating, wove with Gordian twine
 His braided train, and of his fatal guile
 Gave proof unheaded ; others on the grass 350
 Couch'd, and now fill'd with pasture gazing fat,
 Or bedward ruminating ; for the sun
 Declin'd was halting now with prone career
 To th' ocean isles, and in th' ascending scale
 Of heav'n the stars that usher evening rose : 355
 When Satan still in gaze, as first he stood,
 Scarce thus at length fail'd speech recover'd, said.
 O hell ! what do mine eyes with grief behold !
 Into our room of bliss thus high advanc'd
 Creatures of other mould, earth-born perhaps, 360
 Not spirits, yet to heav'nly spirits bright
 Little inferior ; whom my thoughts pursue
 With wonder, and could love, so lively shines
 In them divine resemblance, and such grace
 The hand that form'd them on their shape hath pour'd.

Ah, gentle pair ! ye little think how nigh 366
 Your change approaches, when all these delights
 Will vanish, and deliver you to woe !
 More woe, the more your taste is now of joy ;
 Happy, but for so happy, ill secur'd 370
 Long to continue, and this high feat your heav'n
 Ill fenc'd for heav'n to keep out such a foe
 As now is enter'd ; yet no purpos'd foe
 To you, whom I could pity thus forlorn,
 Though I unpitied. League with you I seek 375
 And mutual amity, so strait, so close,
 That I with you must dwell, or you with me
 Henceforth : my dwelling haply may not please,
 Like this fair Paradise, your sense ; yet such
 Accept your Maker's works : he gave it me, 380
 Which I as freely give : hell shall unfold,
 To entertain you two, her widest gates,
 And send forth all her kings ; there will be room,
 Not like these narrow limits, to receive
 Your num'rous offspring ; if no better place, 385
 Thank him who puts me loath to this revenge
 On you who wrong me not for him who wrong'd.
 And should I at your harmless innocence
 Melt, as I do, yet public reason just,
 Honour and empire with revenge enlarg'd 390
 By conqu'ring this new world, compels me now
 To do what else, though damn'd, I should abhor.
 So spake the fiend, and with necessity,
 The tyrant's plea, excus'd his devilish deeds.
 Then from his lofty stand on that high tree 395
 Down he alights among the sportful herd
 Of those four footed kinds, himself now one,
 Now other, as their shape serv'd best his end
 Nearer to view his prey, and unspy'd
 To mark what of their state he more might learn, 400
 By word or action mark'd : about them round
 A lion now he stalks with fiery glare ;
 Then as a tyger, who by chance hath spy'd
 In some purlieu two gentle fawns at play,
 Straight couches close, then rising changes oft 405
 His couchant watch, as one who chose his ground,

Whence rushing he might surest seize them both,
 Grip'd in each paw : when Adam, first of men,
 To first of women, Eve, thus moving speech,
 Turn'd him, all ear to hear new utterance flow. 410
 Sole partner, and sole part, of all these joys,
 Dearer thyself than all ; needs must the power
 That made us, and for us this ample world,
 Be infinitely good, and of his good
 As liberal and free as infinite ; 415
 That rais'd us from the dust, and plac'd us here
 In all this happiness, who at his hand
 Have nothing merited, nor can perform
 Ought whereof he hath need ; he who requires
 From us no other service than to keep 420
 This one, this easy charge, of all the trees
 In Paradise that bear delicious fruit
 So various, that to taste that only tree
 Of knowledge, planted by the tree of life ;
 So near grows death to life, whate'er death is, 425
 Some dreadful thing no doubt ; for well thou know'st
 God hath pronounc'd it death to taste that tree,
 The only sign of our obedience left,
 Among so many signs of pow'r and rule
 Confer'd upon us, and dominion given 430
 Over all other creatures that possess
 Earth, air, and sea. Then let us not think hard
 One easy prohibition, who enjoy
 Free leave so large to all things else, and choice
 Unlimited of manifold delights : 435
 But let us ever praise him, and extol
 His bounty, following our delightful task,
 To prune these growing plants and tend these flowers ;
 Which were it toilsome, yet with thee were sweet.
 To whom thus Eve reply'd. O thou for whom 440
 And from whom I was form'd, flesh of thy flesh,
 And without whom am to no end, my guide
 And head, what thou hast said is just and right.
 For we to him indeed all praises owe,
 And daily thanks ; I chiefly, who enjoy 445
 So far the happier lot, enjoying thee
Pre-eminent by so much odds, while thou

Like comfort to thyself canst no where find.
 That day I oft remember, when from sleep
 I first awak'd, and found myself repos'd 450
 Under a shade on flow'rs, much wond'ring where
 And what I was, whence thither brought, and how.
 Nor distant far from thence a murm'ring found
 Of waters issu'd from a cave and spread
 Into a liquid plain, then stood unmov'd 455
 Pure as th' expanse of heav'n; I thither went
 With unexperienc'd thought, and laid me down
 On the green bank, to look into the clear
 Smooth lake, that to me seem'd another sky.
 As I bent down to look, just opposite 460
 A shape within the wat'ry gleam appear'd,
 Bending to look on me: I started back,
 It started back; but pleas'd I soon return'd,
 Pleas'd it return'd as soon with ans'ring looks
 Of sympathy and love, there I had fix'd 465
 Mine eyes till now, and pin'd with vain desire,
 Had not a voice thus warn'd me, What thou seest,
 What there thou seest, fair creature, is thyself;
 With thee it came and goes: but follow me,
 And I will bring thee where no shadow stays 470
 Thy coming, and thy soft embraces, he
 Whose image thou art; him thou shalt enjoy
 Inseparably thine; to him shall bear
 Multitudes like thyself, and thence be call'd
 Mother of human race. What could I do, 475
 But follow straight, invisibly thus led?
 Till I espy'd thee, fair indeed and tall,
 Under a platan; yet methought less fair,
 Less winning soft, less amiably mild,
 Than that smooth wat'ry image: back I turn'd: 480
 Thou following, cry'd aloud, Return, fair Eve,
 Whom fly'st thou? whom thou fly'st, of him thou art,
 His flesh, his bone; to give thee being I lent
 Out of my side to thee, nearest my heart,
 Substantial life, to have thee by my side 485
 Henceforth an individual solace dear;
 Part of my soul I seek thee, and thee claim
 My other half. With that thy gentle hand

Seiz'd mine : I yielded ; and from that time see
 How beauty is excell'd by manly grace ; 4
 And wisdom, which alone is truly fair.

So spake our general mother, and with eyes
 Of conjugal attraction unreprov'd
 And meek surrender, half embracing lean'd
 On our first father ; half her swelling breast 4
 Naked met his, under the flowing gold
 Of her loose tresses hid ; he in delight,
 Both of her beauty and submissive charms,
 Smil'd with superior love, as Jupiter
 On Juno smiles, when he impregns the clouds 5
 That shed May flow'rs, and press'd her matron lip
 With kisses pure. Aside the devil turn'd
 For envy ; yet with jealous leer malign
 Ey'd them askance, and to himself thus 'plain'd.

Sight hateful, sight tormenting ! thus these two, 5
 Imparadis'd in one another's arms,
 The happier Eden shall enjoy their fill
 Of bliss on bliss ; while I to hell am thrust,
 Where neither joy nor love, but fierce desire,
 Among our other torments not the least, 5
 Still unfill'd with pain of longing pines ;
 Yet let me not forget what I have gain'd
 From their own mouths : all is not theirs, it seems
 One fatal tree there stands, of knowledge call'd,
 Forbidden them to taste. Knowledge forbidden ?
 Suspicious, reasonless. Why should their LORD
 Envy them that ? can it be sin to know ?
 Can it be death ? and do they only stand
 By ignorance ? is that their happy state,
 The proof of their obedience, and their faith ?
 O fair foundation laid whereon to build
 Their ruin ? Hence I will excite their minds
 With more desire to know, and to reject
 Envious commands, invented with design
 To keep them low, whom knowledge might exalt
 Equal with gods : aspiring to be such,
 They taste, and die : what likelier can er sue ?
 But first with narrow search I must walk round
 This garden, and no corner leave unspy'd ;

A chance but chance may lead where I may meet 530
 Some wand'ring sp'rits of heav'n, by fountain-side,
 Or in thick shade retir'd, from him to draw
 What further would be learn'd. Live while ye may,
 Yet happy pair; enjoy, till I return,
 Short pleasures, for long woes are to succeed. 535
 So saying, his proud step he scornful turn'd,
 But with sly circumspection, and began [roam.
 Through wood, through waste, o'er hill, o'er dale, his
 Mean-while in utmost longitude, where heaven
 With earth and ocean meets, the setting sun 540
 Slowly descended, and with bright aspect
 Against the eastern gate of Paradise
 Levell'd his ev'ning-rays; it was a rock
 Of alabaster, pil'd up to the clouds,
 Conspicuous far, winding with one ascent 545
 Accessible from earth, one entrance high;
 The rest was craggy cliff, that overhung
 Still as it rose, impossible to climb.
 Betwixt the rocky pillars Gabriel sat,
 Chief of th' angelic guards, awaiting night; 550
 About him exercis'd heroic games
 The unarm'd youth of heav'n, but nigh at hand
 Celestial armoury, shields, helms, and spears,
 Hung high, with diamonds flaming, and with gold.
 Thither came Uriel, gliding through the even 555
 On a sun-beam, swift as a shooting star
 In autumn thwarts the night, when vapours fir'd,
 Impres'd the air, and shews the mariner
 From what point of his compass to beware
 Impetuous winds: he thus began in haste. 560
 Gabriel, to thee thy course by lot hath giv'n
 Charge and strict watch, that to this happy place
 No evil thing approach or enter in.
 This day at height of noon came to my sphere
 A spirit, zealous, as he seem'd, to know 565
 More of th' Almighty's works, and chiefly man,
 God's latest image: I describ'd his way,
 Bent all on speed, and mark'd his airy gait;
 But in the mount that lies from Eden north,
 Where he first lighted, soon discern'd his looks 570

Alien from heav'n. with passions full obscur'd :
 Mine eyes pursu'd him still, but under shade
 Lost sight of him : one of the banish'd crew,
 I fear, hath ventur'd from the deep to raise
 New troubles ; him thy care must be to find.

To whom the winged warrior thus return'd.
 Uriel, no wonder if thy perfect sight,
 Amid the sun's bright circle where thou sitt'st,
 See far and wide : in at this gate none pass
 The vigilance here plac'd, but such as come
 Well known from heav'n ; and since meridian hour
 No creature thence : if sp'rit of other sort,
 So minded, hath o'erleap'd these earthy bounds
 On purpose, hard thou know'st it to exclude
 Spiritual substance with corporeal bar.
 But if within the circuit of these walks,
 In whatsoever shape he lurk, of whom
 Thou tell'st, by morrow dawning I shall know.

So promis'd he ; and Uriel to his charge
 Return'd on that bright beam, whose point now rais'd
 Bore him slope downward to the sun now fall'n 5
 Beneath th' Azores ; whether the prime orb,
 Incredible how swift, had thither roil'd
 Diurnal, or this less volubile earth,
 By shorter flight to th' east, had left him there 5
 Arraying with reflected purple and gold
 The clouds that on his western throne attend.

Now came still ev'ning on, and twilight grey
 Had in her sober liv'ry all things clad ;
 Silence accompanied ; for beast and bird, 6
 They to their grassy couch, these to their nests
 Were sunk ; all but the wak'ful nightingale ;
 She all night long her am'rous descant sung ;
 Silence was pleas'd ; now glow'd the firmament
 With living sapphirs : Hesperus, that led 6
 The starry host, rode brightest, till the moon
 Rising in cloudy majesty, at length
 Apparent queen unveil'd her peerless light,
 And o'er the dark her silver mantle threw.

When Adam thus to Eve. Fair consort, th' hour 6
 Of night, and all things now retir'd to rest,

of like repose, since God hath set
and rest, as day and night, to men
re; and the timely dew of sleep
ing with soft slumb'rous weight, inclines 615
-lis: other creatures all day long
e unemploy'd, and less need rest;
h his daily work of body' or mind
ed, which declares his dignity,
regard of heav'n, on all his ways; 620
her animals unactive range,
heir doings God takes no account.
row, ere fresh morning streak the east
st approach of light, we must be risen,
our present labour, to reform 625
'ry arbour, yonder alleys green,
k at noon, with branches overgrown,
ck our scant manuring, and require
nds than ours to lop their wanton growth:
lossoms also, and those dropping gums, 630
bestrown, unsightly and unsmooth,
lance, if we mean to tread with ease;
nile, as Nature wills, night bids us rest.
rom thus Eve, with perfect beauty' adorn'd.
ior and disposer, what thou bidst 635
'd I obey: so God ordains:
y law, thou mine: to know no more
n's happiest knowledge, and her praise.
re conversing I forget all time;
ons, and their change, all please alike. 640
the breath of morn, her rising sweet,
arm of earliest birds; pleasant the sun,
rst on this delightful land he spreads
nt beams, on herb, tree, fruit, and flower,
g with dew; fragrant the fertile earth 645
st show'rs; and sweet the coming on
ful ev'ning mild; then silent night,
is her solemn bird, and this fair moon,
se the gems of heav'n, her starry train:
her breath of morn, when she ascends 650
arm of earliest birds; nor rising sun
delightful land; nor herb, fruit, flower,

Glitt'ring with dew; nor fragrance after showers;
 Nor grateful ev'ning mild; nor silent night,
 With this her solemn bird, nor walk by moon, 655
 Or glitt'ring star-light, without thee is sweet.
 But wherefore all night long shine these? for whom
 This glorious sight, when sleep hath shut all eyes?

To whom our general ancestor reply'd.
 Daughter of God and man, accomplish'd Eve, 660
 These have their course to finish round the earth,
 By morrow ev'ning, and from land to land
 In order, though to nations yet unborn,
 Minist'ring light prepar'd, they set and rise,
 Lest total darkness should by night regain 665
 Her old possession, and extinguish life

In nature and all things; which these soft fires
 Not only enlighten, but with kindly heat
 Of various influence foment and warm,
 Temper or nourish, or in part shed down 670
 Their stellar virtue on all kinds that grow
 On earth, made hereby apter to receive
 Perfection from the sun's more potent ray.

These then, though unbeheld in deep of night, 674
 Shine not in vain; nor think, though men were none,
 That heav'n would want spectators, God want praise:
 Millions of spiritual creatures walk the earth
 Unseen, both when we wake, and when we sleep:
 All these with ceaseless praise his works behold
 Both day and night: how often, from the steep 680
 Of echoing hill or thicket, have we heard
 Celestial voices to the midnight air,

Sole, or responsive each to others note,
 Singing their great Creator? oft in bands
 While they keep watch, or nightly rounding walk, 685
 With heav'nly touch of instrumental sounds
 In full harmonic number join'd, their songs
 Divide the night, and lift our thoughts to heav'n.

Thus talking, hand in hand along they pass'd
 On to their blissful bow'r: it was a place 690
 Chos'n by the sov'reign planter, when he fram'd
 All things to man's delightful use; the roof
 Of thickest covert was inwoven shade

I myrtle, and what higher grew
 id fragrant leaf; on either side 695
 and each odorous bushy shrub,
 the verdant wall; each beauteous flower,
 es, roses, and jessamin,
 h their flourish'd heads between, and wrought
 nder foot the violet, 700
 id hyacinth, with rich inlay,
 he ground, more colour'd than with stone
 emblem: other creature here,
 , insect, or worm, durst enter none;
 their awe of man. In thadier bower 705
 id and sequester'd, though but feign'd,
 vanus never slept, nor nymph,
 is haunted. Here, in clost recess,
 ers, garlands, and sweet smelling herbs,
 Eve deck'd first her nuptial bed, 710
 nly quires the hymenæan sung,
 the genial angel to our fire
 er, in naked beauty more adorn'd,
 y, than Pandora, whom the gods
 with all their gifts, and, O! too like 715
 nt, when to th' unwiser son
 brought by Hermes, she insnar'd
 with her fair looks, to be aveng'd
 ho had stole Jove's authentic fire.
 their shady lodge arriv'd both stood, 720
 d, and under open sky ador'd
 that made both sky, air, earth, and heav'n,
 y beheld, the moon's resplendent globe,
 r pole: Thou also mad'st the night,
 nipotent, and thou the day, 725
 in our appointed work employ'd
 r'd happy in our mutual help,
 al love, the crown of all our bliss
 y thee; and this delicious place,
 large, where thy abundance wants 730
 and uncropt falls to the ground.
 ast promis'd from us two a race
 earth, who shall with us extol
 efs infinite, both when we wake;

And when we seek, as now, thy gift of sleep. 735
 This said unanimous, and other rites
 Observing none, but adoration pure,
 Which God likes best, into their inmost bower
 Handed they went; and eas'd the putting off
 These troublesome disguises which we wear, 740
 Straight side by side were laid: nor turn'd, I ween,
 Adam from his fair spouse, nor Eve the rites
 Mysterious of connubial love refus'd:
 Whatever hypocrites austerely talk
 Of purity, and place, and innocence, 745
 Defaming as impure what God declares
 Pure, and commands to some, leaves free to all.
 Our Maker bids increase: who bids abstain,
 But our destroyer, foe to God and man?
 Hail, wedded love, mysterious law, true source 750
 Of human offspring, sole propriety
 In Paradise of all things common else.
 By thee adult'rous lust was driv'n from men,
 Among the bestial herds to range; by thee
 Founded in reason, loyal, just, and pure, 755
 Relations dear, and all the charities
 Of father, son, and brother, first were known.
 Far be' it, that I should write the sin or shame,
 Or think thee unbecoming holiest place,
 Perpetual fountain of domestic sweets, 760
 Whose bed is undefil'd and chaste pronounc'd,
 Present, or past, as saints and patriarchs us'd.
 Here Love his golden shafts employs, here lights
 His constant lamp, and waves his purple wings.
 R: igns here and revels; not in the bought simile 765
 Of harlots, lovelets, joyless, unendear'd,
 Casual fruition; nor in court amours,
 Mix'd dance, or wanton mask, or midnight-ball,
 Or serenade, which the starv'd lover sings
 To his proud fair, best quitted with disdain. 770
 These lull'd by nightingales, embracing sleep,
 And on their naked limbs the flow'ry roof
 Show'r'd roses, which the morn repair'd. Sleep on,
 Bless'd pair; and, O yet happiest, if ye seek
 No happier state, and know no more. 775

rad night measur'd with her shadowy cone
 y up hill this vast sublunar vault,
 n their iv'ry port the Cherubim
 uing at th' accustom'd hour, stood arm'd
 ight watches in warlike parade; 780
 abriel to his next in pow'r thus spake.
 l, half these draw off, and coast the south
 &est watch; these other wheel the north;
 uit meets full west. As flame they part,
 eeling to the shield, half to the spear. 785
 ese, two strong and subtle sp'rits he call'd
 ur him stood, and gave them thus in charge.
 el and Zephon, with wing'd speed
 ough this garden, leave unsearch'd no nook;
 fly where those two fair creatures lodge, 790
 l perhaps asleep, secure of harm.
 ing from the sun's decline arriv'd,
 s of some infernal spirit seen
 ard bent (who could have thought?) escap'd
 s of hell, on errand bad no doubt: 795
 ere ye find, seize fast, and hither bring
 ing, on he led his radiant files,
 s the moon: these to the bow'r direct,
 i of whom they fought: him there they found
 e a toad, close at the ear of Eve, 800
 by his devilish art to reach
 ins of her fancy, and with them forge
 as he list, phantasms and dreams;
 spiring venom, he might taint
 nal spirits, that from pure blood arise. 805
 tle breaths from rivers pure, thence raise
 distemper'd, discontented thoughts,
 pes, vain aims, inordinate desires,
 p with high conceits ingend'ring pride.
 is intent. I huriel with his spear 810
 l lightly: for no falsehood can endure
 of celestial temper, but returns
 to its own likeness: up he starts
 'd and surpris'd. As when a spark
 on a heap of nitrous powder, laid 815
 he tun some magazine to store

Against a rumour'd war. the smutty grain
 With sudden blaze diffus'd, inflames the air ;
 So started up in his own shape the fiend.
 Back slept those two fair angels, half amaz'd 820
 So sudden to behold the grisly king ;
 Yet thus, unmov'd with fear, accost him soon.

Which of those rebel sp'rits adjudg'd to hell
 Com'st thou, escap'd thy prison ? and transform'd,
 Why satt'st thou like an enemy in wait, 825
 Here watching at the head of these that sleep ?
 Know ye not then, said Satan, fill'd with scorn,
 Know ye not me ? ye knew me once no mate
 For you, there sitting where ye durst not soar ;
 Not to know me argues yourselves unknown, 830
 The lowest of your throng ; or if ye knew,
 Why ask ye, and superfluous begin
 Your message, like to end as much in vain ?

To whom thus Zephon, answering scorn with scorn
 Think not, revolted sp'rit, thy shape the same 835
 Or undiminis'd brightness to be known,
 As when thou stood'st in heav'n upright and pure ;
 That glory then, when thou no more wast good,
 Departed from thee ; and thou resembl'st now
 Thy sin and place of doom obscure and foul. 840
 But come, for thou, be sure, shalt give account
 To him who sent us, whose charge is to keep
 This place inviolable, and these from harm.

So spake the Cherub ; and his grave rebuke,
 Severe in youthful beauty, added grace 845
 Invincible : abash'd the devil stood,
 And felt how awful goodness is, and saw
 Virtue in her shape how lovely ; saw, and pin'd
 His loss : but chiefly to find here observ'd
 His lustre visibly impair'd ; yet seem'd 850
 Undaunted. If I must contend, said he,
 Best with the best, the sender not the sent,
 All at once : more glory will be won,
 If be lost. Thy fear, said Zephon bold,
 Have us trial what the least can do 855
 Against the wicked, and thence weak.
 The fiend reply'd not, overcome with rage ;

: a proud steed rein'd, went haughty on.
 ing his iron curb : to strive or fly
 l it vain ; awe from above had quell'd 860
 rt, nor else difmay'd. Now drew they nigh
 stern point, where those half-rounding guards
 t, and closing stood in squadron join'd,
 ig next command. To whom their chief,
 from the front thus call'd aloud. 865
 ends, I hear the tread of nimble feet
 this way, and now by glimpse discern
 and Zephor through the shade ;
 h them comes a third of regal port,
 ed splendor wan ; who by his gait 870
 rce demeanor, seems the prince of hell,
 ly to part hence without contest ;
 rm, for in his look defiance lours.
 :arce had ended, when those two approach'd,
 ief related whom they brought, where found,
 isied, in what form and posture couch'd. 876
 hom with stern regard thus Gabriel spake.
 st thou, Satan, broke the bounds prescrib'd
 transgressions, and disturb'd the charge
 rs, who approve not to transgress 880
 example, but have pow'r and right
 sion thy bold entrance on this place ;
 'd, it seems, to violate sleep, and those
 dwellings God hath planted here in bliss ?
 hom thus Satan with contemptuous brow, 885
 , thou hadst in heav'n th' esteem of wise,
 h I held thee ; but this question ask'd
 : in doubt. Lives there who loves his pain ?
 ould not, finding way, break loose from hell,
 ither doom'd ? Thou wouldst thyself, no doubt,
 ldly venture to whatever place 891
 : from pain, where thou might'st hope to change
 it with ease, and soonest recompense
 th delight, which in this place I sought ;
 no reason, who know'st only good, 895
 hast not try'd, and wilt object
 who bound us : let him surer bar
 gates, if he intends our stay

Of Ceres ripe for harvest waving bends
 Her bearded groves of ears, which way the wind
 Sways them ; the careful ploughman doubting stands ;
 Left on the threshing floor his hopeful sheaves
 Prove chaff. On th' other side, Satan alarm'd 985
 Collecting all his might, dilated stood,
 Like Teneriff or Atlas unremov'd :
 His stature reach'd the sky, and on his crest
 Sat horror plum'd ; nor wanted in his grasp
 What seem'd both spear and shield. Now dreadful deeds
 Might have ensu'd ; not only Paradise 991
 In this commotion, but the starry cope
 Of heav'n perhaps, or all the elements,
 At least had gone to wrack, disturb'd and torn
 With violence of this conflict, had not soon 995
 Th' Eternal, to prevent such horrid fray,
 Hung forth in heav'n his golden scales, yet seen
 Betwixt Astrea and the Scorpion sign,
 Wherein all things created first he weigh'd,
 The pendulous round earth with balanc'd air 1000
 In counterpoise, now ponders all events,
 Battles and realms : In these he put two weights,
 The sequel each of parting and of fight ;
 The latter quick up flew, and kick'd the beam ;
 Which Gabriel spying, thus bespoke the fiend. 1005
 Satan, I know thy strength, and thou know'st mine,
 Neither our own, but giv'n : what folly then
 To boast what arms can do ? since thine no more
 Than heav'n permits, nor mine, though doubled now
 To trample thee as mire : for proof look up, 1010
 And read thy lot in yon celestial sign,
 Where thou art weigh'd, and shewn how light, how
 weak,
 If thou resist. The fiend look'd up, and knew
 His mounted scale aloft : no more ; but fled
 Murm'ring, and with him fled the shades of night. 1015

END OF THE FOURTH BOOK.

PARADISE LOST.

BOOK V.

THE ARGUMENT.

ing approached, Eve relates to Adam her troublesome
m ; he likes it not, yet comforts her : they come forth
their day-labours : their morning hymn at the door of
bower. God, to render man inexcusable, sends
Satan to admonish him of his obedience, of his free
will, of his enemy near at hand, who he is, and why
his enemy, and whatever else may avail Adam to know.
Satan comes down to Paradise, his appearance describ-
ing his coming discerned by Adam afar off, sitting at the
door of his bower ; he goes out to meet him, brings him
to his lodge, entertains him with the choicest fruits of
Paradise got together by Eve ; their discourse at table :
Satan performs his message ; minds Adam of his state
of his enemy ; relates, at Adam's request, who that
enemy is, and how he came to be so, beginning from his
revolt in heaven, and the occasion thereof ; how he
with his legions after him to the parts of the north, and
how he incited them to rebel with him, persuading all but
Abdiel a Seraph, who in argument dissuades and
deserts him, then forsakes him.

Now Morn, her rosy steps in th' eastern clime
Advancing, sow'd th' earth with orient pearl,
Adam wak'd ; so custom'd ; for his sleep
airy light from pure digestion bred,
temperate vapours bland, which th' only found
lives and fuming rills, Aurora's fan, 6
lightly dispers'd, and the shrill mating song
fills on ev'ry bough ; so much the more
wonder was to find unwak'd Eve
treasures discompos'd, and glowing cheek, 10
rough unquiet rest : he, on his side

Leaning half rais'd, with looks of cordial love
 Hung over her enamour'd, and beheld
 Beauty, which whether waking or asleep
 Shot forth peculiar graces ; then with voice 15
 Mild, as when Zephyrus on Flora breathes,
 Her hand soft touching, whisper'd thus. Awake,
 My fairest, my espous'd, my latest found,
 Heav'n's last best gift, my ever new delight,
 Awake : the morning shines, and the fresh field 20
 Calls us ; we lose the prime, to mark how spring
 Our tended plants, how blows the citron grove,
 What drops the mirrh, and what the balmy reed,
 How nature paints her colours, how the bee
 Sits on the bloom extracting liquid sweet. 25
 Such whisp'ring wak'd her, but with startled eye
 On Adam ; whom embracing, thus she spake.
 O sole in whom my thoughts find all repose,
 My glory, my perfection, glad I see
 Thy face, and morn return'd : for I this night 30
 (Such night till this I never pass'd) have dream'd,
 If dream'd, not, as I oft am wont, of thee,
 Works of day past, or morrow's next design ;
 But of offence and trouble, which my mind
 Knew never till this irksome night : methought 35
 Close at mine ear one call'd me forth to walk
 With gentle voice : I thought it thine : it said,
 Why sleep'st thou Eve ? now is the pleasant time,
 The cool, the silent, save where silence yields
 To the night warbling bird, that now awake 40
 Tunes sweetest his love-labour'd song ; now reigns
 Full orb'd the moon, and with more pleasing light
 Shadowy sets off the face of things ; in vain,
 If none regard : heav'n wakes with all his eyes ;
 Whom to behold but thee, Nature's desire ? 45
 In whose sight all things joy, with ravishment
 Attracted by thy beauty still to gaze.
 I rose as at thy call, but found thee not ;
 To find thee I directed then my walk ;
 And on, methought, alone I pass'd through ways 50
 That brought me on a sudden to the tree
 Of interdicted knowledge : fair it seem'd,

irer to my fancy than by day :
 I wond'ring look'd, beside it stood
 and wing'd like one of those from heav'n
 seen ; his dewy locks distill'd 56
 a ; on that tree he also gaz'd ;
 fair plant, said he, with fruit furcharg'd,
 none to ease thy load, and taste thy sweet,
 nor man ? Is knowledge so despis'd ? 60
 or what reserve forbids to taste ?
 who will, none shall from me withhold
 thy offer'd good ; why else set here ?
 I, he paus'd not, but with vent'rous arm
 cut, he tasted : me damp horror chill'd 65
 bold words, vouch'd with a deed so bold.
 thus overjoy'd, O fruit divine,
 thyself, but much more sweet thus crompt,
 when here, it seems, as only fit
 us, yet able to make gods of men : 70
 why not gods of men, since good, the more
 communicated, more abundant grows,
 can nor impair'd, but honour'd more ?
 happy creature, fair angelic Eve,
 thou also ; happy though thou art, 75
 thou may'st be, worthier canst not be :
 is, and be henceforth among the gods
 a goddess, not to earth confin'd,
 sometimes in the air, as we ; sometimes
 to heav'n, by merit thine, and see 80
 how the gods live there, and such live thou.
 When he drew nigh, and to me held,
 my mouth, of that same fruit held part
 he had pluck'd ; the pleasant savoury smell
 kinden'd appetite, that I, methought, 85
 not but taste. Forthwith up to the clouds
 when I flew, and underneath beheld
 the outstretch'd immense, a prospect wide
 various : wond'ring at my flight and change
 high exaltation, suddenly 90
 I was gone, and I, methought, sunk down,
 I asleep : but, O how glad I wak'd,
 this but a dream ! Thus Eve her night

With the fix'd stars, fix'd in their orb that flies ;
 And ye five other wond'ring fires that move
 In mytic dance not without song, resound
 His praise, who out of darkness call'd up light. 180
 Air and ye elements, the eldest-birth
 Of Nature's womb, that in quaternion run
 Perpetual circle, multiform, and mix,
 And nourish all things, let your ceaseless change
 Vary to our great Maker still new praise ;
 Ye mists and exhalations that now rise 185
 From hill or steaming lake, dusky or gray,
 Till the sun paint your fleecing skirts with gold,
 In honour to the world's great Author rise,
 Whether to deck with clouds th' uncolour'd sky,
 Or wet the thirsty earth with falling showers, 190
 Rising or falling still advance his praise.
 His praise, ye winds, that from four quarters blow,
 Breathe soft or loud ; and wave your tops, ye pines,
 With ev'ry plant, in sign of worship wave.
 Fountains, and ye that warble, as ye flow, 195
 Melodious numbers, warbling tune his praise.
 Join voices all ye living souls ; ye birds,
 That singing up to heav'n-gate ascend,
 Bear on your wings and in your notes his praise.
 Ye that in waters glide, and ye that walk 200
 The earth, and stately tread, or lowly creep :
 Witness if I be silent, morn or ev'n,
 To hill, or valley, fountain or fresh shade,
 Made vocal by my song, and taught his praise.
 Hail, universal LORD ! be bounteous still 205
 To give us only good : and if the night
 Have gather'd ought of evil, or conceal'd,
 Disperse it, as now light dispels the dark.
 So pray'd they innocent, and to their thoughts
 Firm peace recover'd soon, and wonted calm. 210
 On to their morning's rural work they haste,
 Among sweet dews and flow'rs ; where any row
 Of fruit-trees over woody rea h'd too far
 Their pamper'd boughs, and needed hands to check
 Fruitless embraces : or they led the vine 215
 To wed her elm ; she 'spous'd about him twines

arriageable arms, and with her brings
 w'r, th' adopted clusters, to adorn
 ren leaves. Them thus employ'd beheld
 thy heav'n's high KING, and to him call'd 220
 el, the sociable sp'rit, that deign'd
 vel with Tobias, and secur'd
 rriage with the sev'ntimes-wedded maid.
 hael, said he, thou hear'st what stir on earth
 rom hell 'scap'd through the darksome gulf, 225
 ais'd in Paradise, and how disturb'd
 ght the human pair, how he designs
 a at once to ruin all mankind.
 erefore, half this day. as friend with friend
 se with Adam, in what bow'r or shade 230
 indst him from the heat of noon retir'd,
 oite his day-labour with repast,
 a repose; and such discourse bring on,
 y advise him of his happy state,
 efs in his pow'r left free to will, 235
 his own free will; his will though free,
 itable; whence warn him to beware
 rve not too secure. Tell him withal
 nger, and from whom; what enemy,
 ll'n himself from heav'n, is plotting now 240
 d of others from like state of blifs:
 lence? No, for that shall be withstood;
 deceit and lies: this let him know,
 iffully transgressing he pretend
 al unadmonish'd, unforwarn'd. 245
 ake th' eternal Father, and fulfill'd
 tice: nor delay'd the winged faint
 is charge receiv'd; but from among
 nd celestial Ardors, where he stood
 with his gorgeous wings, up springing light 250
 ough the midst of heav'n; th' angelic quires,
 h hand parting, to his speed gave way
 gh all th' empyreal road; till at the gate
 v'n arriv'd, the gate self open'd wide,
 den hinges turning, as by work 255
 the sov'reign Architect had fram'd.
 ence, no cloud, or to obstruct his sight,

Star interpos'd, however small, he sees
 Not unconform to other shining globes,
 Earth, and the garden of God, with cedars crown'd
 Above all hills; as when by night the glafs 261
 Of Galileo, less assur'd, observes
 Imagin'd land and regions in the moon:
 Or pilot, from amidst the Cyclades,
 Delos or Samos first appearing, kens 265
 A cloudy spot. Down thither prone in flight
 He speeds, and through the vast ethereal sky
 Sails between worlds and worlds, with steady wing
 Now on the polar winds, then with quick fan
 Winnows the buxom-air; till within soar 270
 Of tow'ring eagles, t' all the fowls he seems
 A phenix, gaz'd by all, as that sole bird,
 When to inhurne his relics in the sun's
 Bright temple, to Egyptian Thebes he flies.
 At once on the eastern cliff of Paradise 275
 He lights, and to his proper shape returns,
 A Seraph wing'd: six wings he wore, to shade
 His lineaments divine; the pair that clad
 Each shoulder broad, came mantling o'er his breast
 With regal ornament; the middle pair 280
 Girt like a starry zone his waste, and round
 Skirted his loins and thighs with downy gold,
 And colours dipt in heav'n; the third his feet
 Shadow'd from either heel with feather'd mail,
 Sky tinctur'd grain. Like Maia's son he stood, 285
 And shook his plumes, that heav'nly fragrance fill'd
 The circuit wide. Straight knew him all the bands
 Of angels under watch; and to his state,
 And to his message high, in honour rise;
 For on some message high they guess'd him bound. 290
 Their glitt'ring tents he pass'd, and now is come
 Into the blissful field, through groves of myrrh,
 And flow'ring odours, cassia, nard, and balm;
 A wilderness of sweets; for nature here
 Wanton'd as in her prime, and play'd at will 295
 Her virgin fancies, pouring forth more sweet,
 Wild above rule or art; enormous bliss.
Him through the spicy forest onward come

liscern'd, as in the door he sat
 ool bow'r, while new the mounted sun 300
 wa direct his fervid rays to warm
 inmost womb, more warmth than Adam needs ;
 e within, due at her hour, prepar'd
 ner favoury fruits, of taste to please
 petite, and not disrelish thirst 305
 rous draughts between, from milky stream,
 r grape } to whom thus Adam call'd.
 hither Eve, and worth thy sight behold
 d among those trees, what glorious shape
 his way moving ; seems another morn 310
 i mid-noon ; some great behest from heav'n
 erhaps he brings, and will vouchsafe
 y to be our guest. But go with speed,
 at thy stores contain, bring forth, and pow'r
 nce, fit to honour and receive 315
 v'nly stranger : well we may afford
 ers their own gifts, and large bestow
 rge bestow'd, where nature multiplies
 ile growth, and by disburd'ning grows
 uitful, which instructs us not to spare. 320
 ion thus Eve. Adam, earth's hallow'd mould,
 inspir'd, small store will serve, where store,
 ns, ripe for use hangs on the stalk ;
 at by frugal storing firmness gains
 ish, and superfluous moist consumes ; 325
 ill haste, and from each bough and brake,
 ant and juiciest gourd, will pluck such choice
 rtain our angel-guest, as he
 ng shall confess, that here on earth
 h dispens'd his bounties as in heav'n. 330
 ring, with dispatchful looks in haste
 us, on hospitable thoughts intent,
 oice to chuse for delicacy best,
 der, so contriv'd as not to mix
 not well join'd, inelegant, but bring 335
 ter taste upheld with kindest change ;
 er then, and from each tender stalk
 er Earth, all-bearing mother, yields
 i East and West, or middle shore,

In Pontus, or the Punic coast, or where
 Alcinous reign'd, fruit of all kinds, in coat
 Rough or smooth rin'd, or bearded husk, or shell,
 She gathers tribute large, and on the board
 Heaps with unsparing hand: for drink the grape
 She crushes, inoffensive most, and meathes
 From many berry', and from sweet kernels press'd
 She tempers dulcet creams; nor these to hold
 Wants her fit vessels pure; then strows the ground
 With rose and odours from the shrub unfum'd.

Mean while our primitive great fire, to meet
 His god-like guest, walks forth, without more train
 Accompanied than with his own complete
 Perfections; in himself was all his state,
 More solemn than the tedious pomp that waits
 On princes, when their rich retinue long
 Of horses led, and grooms besmear'd with gold,
 Dazzles the crowd, and sets them all agape.
 Nearer his presence Adam, though not aw'd,
 Yet with submissive approach and reverence meek,
 As t' a superior nature, bowing low,
 Thus said. Native of heav'n, for other place
 None can than heav'n such glorious shape contain
 Since by descending from the thrones above,
 Those happy places thou hast deign'd a while
 To want, and honour these, vouchsafe with us
 Two' only, who yet by fov'reign gifts possess
 This spacious ground, in yonder shady bower
 To rest, and what the garden choicest bears
 To sit and taste, till this meridian heat
 Be over, and the sun more cool decline.

Whom thus th' angelic Virtue answer'd mild,
 Adam, I therefore came; nor art thou such
 Created, or such place hast here to dwell,
 As may not oft invite, though sp'rits of heav'n,
 To visit thee: lead on then where thy bower
 O'erhades; for these mid-hours, till ev'ning rise,
 I have at will. So to the sylvan lodge
 They came, that like Pomona's arbour smil'd,
 With flow'rets deck'd, and fragrant smells; but E
 Undeck'd save with herself, more lovely tax

wood nymph, or the fairest goddess feign'd
 ee that in mount Ida naked strove,
 t'entertain her guest from heav'n; no veil
 eded, virtue proof; no thought infirm
 i her cheek. On whom the angel Hail 385
 'd, the holy salutation us'd
 after to bless'd Mary, second Eve.
 l mother of mankind, whose fruitful womb
 ll the world more num'rous with thy sons,
 with these various fruits the trees of God 390
 reap'd this table. Rais'd of grassy turf
 table was, and mossy seats had round;
 n her ample square from side to side
 urn pil'd, though spring and autumn here
 l hand in hand. A while discourse they hold
 r left dinner cool; when thus began 396
 thor. Heav'nly stranger, please to taste
 bounties, which our nourisher, from whom
 rfect good, unmeasur'd out, descends,
 for food and for delight hath caus'd 400
 rth to yield; unsavoury food perhaps
 it'al natures; only this I know,
 ne celestial Father gives to all.
 whom the angel. Therefore what he gives
 e-praise be ever sing) to man in part 405
 al, may of purest sp'rits be found
 grateful food: and food alike those pure
 gential substances require,
 h your rational; and both contain
 i them every lower faculty 410
 e, whereby they hear, see, smell, touch, taste,
 g concoct, digest, assimilate,
 orporeal to incorporeal turn.
 ow, whatever was created, needs
 sustain'd and fed; of elements, 415
 offer feeds the purer, earth the sea,
 and sea feed air, the air those fires
 al, and as lowest, first the moon;
 ce in her visage round those unpurg'd
 rs not yet into her substance turn'd; 420
 ith the moon no nourishment exhale

From her moist continent to higher orbs.
 The sun, that light imparts to all, receives
 From all his alimantal recompense,
 In humid exhalations, and at ev'n
 Sups with the ocean. Though in heav'n the trees
 Of life ambrosial fruitage bear, and vines
 Yield nectar; though from off the boughs each
 We brush mellifluous dews, and find the ground
 Cover'd with pearly grain: yet God hath here
 Vary'd his bounty so with new delights,
 As may compare with heav'n; and to taste,
 Think not I shall be nice. So down they sat,
 And to their viands fell: nor seemingly
 The angel, nor in mist, the common gloss
 Of Theologians; but with keen dispatch
 Of real hunger, and concoctive heat
 To transubstantiate, what redounds, transpires
 Through sp'rits with ease; nor wonder; if by fire
 Of sooty coal th' empiric alchemist
 Can turn, or holds it possible to turn,
 Metals of drossiest ore to perfect gold,
 As from the mine. Mean while at table Eve
 Minister'd naked, and their flowing cups
 With pleasant liquors crown'd. O innocence
 Deserving Paradise! if ever, then,
 Then had the sons of God excuse t' have been
 Enamour'd at that sight; but in those hearts
 Love unlibidinous reign'd, nor jealousy
 Was understood, the injur'd lover's hell.
 Thus when with meats and drinks they had suff
 Not burden'd nature, sudden mind arose
 In Adam, not to let th' occasion pass
 Giv'n him by this great conference, to know
 Of things above this world, and of their be'ing
 Who dwell in heav'n, whose excellence he saw
 Transcend his own so far, whose radiant forms,
 Divine effulgence, whose high pow'r so far
 Exceeded human: and his wary speech
 Thus to th' empyreal minister he fram'd.
 Inhabitant with God, now know I well
 Thy favour, in this honour done to man;

V. PARADISE LOST.

123

whose lowly roof thou hast vouchsaf'd
 to, and these earthly fruits to taste,
 lot of angels, yet accepted so, 465
 more willingly thou could'st not seem
 to'n's high feasts t' have fed; yet what compare?
 whom the winged Hierarch reply'd.
 In him, one Almighty is, from whom
 all things proceed, and up to him return, 470
 depriv'd from good; created all
 from perfection, one first matter all
 deriv'd with various forms, various degrees
 of substance, and in things that live, of life;
 more refin'd, more spirit'ous, and pure, 475
 nearer to him plac'd, no nearer tending,
 in their several active spheres assign'd,
 ready up to spirit work, in bounds
 proportion'd to each kind. So from the root
 grows lighter the green stalk, from thence the leaves
 airy, last the bright consummate flow'r 481
 odorously breathes: flow'rs, and their fruits,
 for nourishment, by gradual scale sublim'd,
 all spir'its aspire, to animal,
 intellectual: give both life and sense, 485
 and understanding; whence the soul
 of man receives, and reason is her being,
 either sensitive, or intuitive: discourse
 is first yours, the latter most is ours,
 differing but in degree, of kind the same. 490
 Consider not then, what God for you saw good
 to suffer not, but convert, as you,
 to proper substance. Time may come, when men
 and angels may participate, and find
 convenient diet, nor too light fare; 495
 from these corporal nutriments perhaps
 their bodies may at last turn all to spir'its,
 mov'd by tract of time, and wing'd ascend
 ethereal, as we, or may at choice
 either in heav'nly Paradises dwell; 500
 and be found obedient, and retain
 everlastingly firm his love entire,
 as progeny you are. Mean while enjoy

Your fill what happiness this happy state
 Can comprehend, incapable of more.
 'To whom the patriarch of mankind reply'd.
 O favourable spirit, propitious guest,
 Well hast thou taught the way that might direct
 Our knowledge, and the scale of nature set
 From center to circumference, whereon,
 In contemplation of created things,
 By steps we may ascend to God. But say,
 What meant that caution join'd, If ye be found
 Obedient? Can we want obedience then
 To him, or possibly his love desert,
 Who form'd us from the dust, and plac'd us here
 Full to the utmost measure of what bliss
 Human desires can seek or apprehend?
 To whom the angel. Son of heav'n and earth,
 Attend. That thou art happy, owe to God;
 That thou continu'st such, owe to thyself,
 That is, to thy obedience; therein stand.
 This was that caution giv'n thee; be advis'd.
 God made thee perfect, not immutable;
 And good he made thee, but to persevere
 He left it in thy pow'r; ordain'd thy will
 By nature free, nor over-rul'd by fate
 Inextricable, or strict necessity:
 Our voluntary service he requires,
 Not our necessitated; such with him
 Finds no acceptance, nor can find; for how
 Can hearts, not free, be try'd whether they serve
 Willing or no, who will but what they must
 By destiny, and can no other chuse?
 Myself and all th' angelic host, that stand
 In sight of God enthron'd, our happy state
 Hold, as you yours, while our obedience holds;
 On other surety none; freely we serve,
 Because we freely love, as in our will
 To love or not; in this we stand or fall:
 And some are fall'n, to disobedience fall'n,
 And so from heav'n to deepest hell; O fall
 From what high state of bliss into what woe!
 To whom our great progenitor. Thy words

BOOK V. PARADISE LOST. 155

Attentive, and with more delighted ear, 545
 Divine instructor, I have heard, that when
 Cherubic songs by night from neighb'ring hills
 Aereal music send: nor knew I not
 To be both will and deed created free;
 Yet that we never shall forget to love 550
 Our Maker, and obey him whose command
 Single is yet so just, my constant thoughts
 Assur'd me, and still assure: though what thou tell'st
 Hath pass'd in heav'n, some doubts within me move,
 But more desire to hear, if thou consent, 555
 The full relation. which must needs be strange,
 Worthy of sacred silence to be heard:
 And we have yet large day; for scarce the sun
 Hath finish'd half his journey, and scarce begins 560
 His other half in the great zone of heav'n.
 Thus Adam made request: and Raphael,
 After short pause assenting, thus began.
 High matter thou injoin'st me, O prime of men,
 Sad task, and hard: for how shall I relate
 To human sense th' invisible exploits 565
 Of warring spirits? how without remorse
 The ruin of so many glorious once
 And perfect while they stood? how last unfold
 The secrets of another world, perhaps
 Not lawful to reveal? Yet for thy good 570
 This is dispens'd; and what surmounts the reach
 Of human sense, I shall delineate so,
 By lik'ning spiritual to corporeal forms,
 As may express them best; though what if earth
 Be but the shadow of heav'n, and things therein 575
 Each t' other like, more than on earth is thought?
 As yet this world was not, and Chaos wild [rests
 Reign'd where these heav'ns now roll, where earth now
 Upon her centre pois'd; when on a day 580
 (For time, though in eternity apply'd
 To motion, measures all things durable
 By present, past, and future) on such a day
 As heav'n's great year brings forth, th' empyreal host
 Of angels, by imperial summons call'd,
 Innumerable before th' Almighty's throne 585

Forthwith, from all the ends of heav'n, appear'd
 Under their hierarchs in orders bright :
 Ten thousand thousand ensigns high advanc'd,
 Standards and gonfalons 'twixt van and rear
 Stream in the air, and for distinction serve
 Of hierarchies, of orders, and degrees ;
 Or in their glitt'ring tissues bear emblaz'd
 Holy memorials, acts of zeal and love
 Recorded eminent. Thus when in orbs
 Of circuit inexpressible they stood,
 Orb within orb, the Father infinite,
 By whom in bliss imbosom'd sat the Son,
 Amidst as from a flaming mount, whose top
 Brightness had made invisible, thus spake.

Hear all ye angels, progeny of light,
 Thrones, dominations, principdoms, virtues, pow'rs,
 Hear my decree, which unrevok'd shall stand.
 This day I have begot whom I declare
 My only Son, and on this holy hill
 Him have anointed, whom ye now behold
 At my right hand : your Head I him appoint ;
 And by myself have sworn, to him shall bow
 All knees in heav'n, and shall confess him LORD :
 Under his great vicegerent reign abide
 United as one individual soul,
 For ever happy : him who disobey,
 Me disobey, breaks union, and that day
 Cast out from God and blessed vision, falls
 Into' utter darkness, deep ingulf'd, his place
 Ordain'd without redemption, without end.

So spake th' Omnipotent, and with his words
 All seem'd well pleas'd ; all seem'd, but were not all.
 That day, as other solemn days, they spent
 In song and dance about the sacred hill ;
 Mystical dance, which yonder starry sphere
 Of planets and of fix'd, in all her wheels
 Resembles nearest, mazes intricate,
 Eccentric, intervolv'd, yet regular,
 Then most, when most irregular they seem,
 And in their motions harmony divine,
 So smooths her charming tones, that God's own ear

delighted. Ev'ning now approach'd
 we have also' our ev'ning and our morn,
 (for change delectable, not need),
 with from dance to sweet repast they turn 630
 as; all in circles as they stood,
 are set, and on a sudden pi'd
 angels' food; and rubied nectar flows,
 set, in diamond, and massy gold;
 of delicious vines, the growth of heav'n. 635
 where repos'd, and with fresh flow'rets crown'd,
 that, they drink, and in communion sweet
 immortality and joy, secure
 sit, where full measure only bounds
 before th' all bounteous King, who show'r'd
 copious hands, rejoicing in their joy. 641
 when ambrosial night, with clouds exhal'd
 that high mount of God, whence light and shade
 both, the face of brightest heav'n and chang'd
 ateful twilight, (for night comes not there 645
 under veil), and roseate dews dispos'd,
 to th' unsleeping eyes of God to rest;
 cover'd all the plain, and wider far
 all this globous earth in plain outspread,
 are the courts of God), th' angelic throng, 650
 set in bands and files, their camp extend
 ing streams among the trees of life,
 numbers numberless, and sudden rear'd,
 and tabernacles, where they slept
 with cool winds; save those who, in their course,
 sing hymns about the sov'reign throne 656
 ate all night long. But not so wak'd
 to call him now, his former name
 had no more in heav'n; he of the first,
 the first Arch Angel, great in pow'r, 660
 our and pre-eminence, yet fraught
 with envy 'gainst the Son of God, that day
 set off by his great Father, and proclaim'd
 the King anointed, could not bear
 to see his equal that sight, and thought himself impair'd.
 He then, with indignation, and disdain, 666
 at midnight brought on the dusky hour,

Friendliest to sleep and silence. he resolv'd
 With all his legions to dislodge, and leave
 Unworshipp'd, unobey'd, the throne supreme, 670
 Contemptuous; and his next subordinate
 Awak'ning, thus to him in secret spake.

Sleep'st thou, companion dear, what sleep can close
 Thy eye-lids? and remember'st what decree
 Of yesterday, so late hath pats'd the lips 675

Of heav'n's Almighty I thou to me thy thoughts
 Wast wont, I mine to thee was wont t' impart;
 Both waking we were one; how then can now
 Thy sleep dissent? New laws thou fcest impos'd;
 New laws from him who reigns, new minds may raise
 In us who serve, new counsels to debate 681

What doubtful may ensue: more in this place
 To utter is not safe. Assemble thou

Of all these myriads which we lead the chief;
 Tell them that by command, ere yet dim night 685

Her shadowy cloud withdraws, I am to haste,
 And all who under me their banners wave,
 Homeward, with flying march, where we possess
 The quarters of the north; there to prepare
 Fit entertainment to receive our King, 690

The great Messiah, and his new commands,
 Who speedily through all the hierarchies
 Intends to pass triumphant, and give laws.

So spake the false Arch-angel, and infus'd
 Bad influence into th' unwary breast 695

Of his associate: he together calls,
 Or several one by one, the regent powers,
 Under him regent; tells, as he was taught,
 That the Most High commanding, now ere night,
 Now ere dim night had disincumber'd heav'n, 700

The great hierarchal standard was to move;
 Tells the suggested cause, and casts between
 Ambiguous words and jealousies, to found
 Or taint integrity: but all obey'd

The wonted signal, and superior voice 705
 Of their great potentate; for great indeed

His name, and high was his degree in heav'n;
 His count'nance, as the morning star that guides

V. PARADISE LOST. 129

erry flock, allur'd them, and with lies
 after him the third part of heav'n's host. 710
 n while th' Eternal eye, whose sight discerns
 felt thoughts, from forth his holy mount,
 om within the golden lamps that burn
 y before him, saw, without their light,
 on rising; saw in whom how spread 715
 g the sons of morn, what multitudes
 anded to oppose high his decree;
 niling to his only Son, thus said.
 , thou in whom my glory I behold
 resplendence, heir of all my might, 720
 it now concerns us to be sure
 omnipotence, and with what arms
 can to hold what anciently we claim
 ty or empire: such a foe
 g, who intends t' erect his throne 725
 to ours, throughout the spacious north;
 content. hath in his thought to try
 tle, what our pow'r is, or our right.
 , advise, and to this hazard draw
 peed what force is left, and all employ 730
 defence; lest unawares we lose
 ur high place, our sanctuary, our hill.
 whom the Son with calm aspect, and clear,
 ing divine, ineffable, serene,
 answer. Mighty Father, thou thy foes 735
 hast in derision, and secure
 r'st at their vain designs and tumults vain;
 r to me of glory, whom their hate
 ates, when they see all regal pow'r
 me to quell their pride, and in event 740
 whether I be dextrous to subdue
 ebels, or be found the worst in heav'n.
 spake the Son; but Satan, with his pow'rs,
 as advanc'd on winged speed, an host
 nerable as the stars of night 745
 rs of morning dew-drops, which the sun
 arls on ev'ry leaf and ev'ry flower.
 ns they pass'd, the mighty regencies
 raphim, and Potentates, and Thrones,

In their triple degrees ; regions to which 750
 All thy dominion, Adam, is no more
 Than what this garden is to all the earth,
 And all the sea, from one entire globe
 Stretch'd into longitude ; which having pass'd,
 At length into the limits of the north 755
 They came ; and Satan to his Royal seat
 High on a hill, far blazing, as a mount
 Rais'd on a mount, with pyramids and tow'rs
 From diamond quarries hewn, and rocks of gold ;
 The palace of great Lucifer, (so call 760
 That structure in the dialect of men
 Interpreted) which not long after, he
 Affecting all equality with God,
 In imitation of that mount whereon
 Messiah was declar'd in sight of heav'n, 765
 The mountain of the congregation call'd ;
 For thither he assembled all his train,
 Pretending so commanded to consult
 About the great reception of their King,
 Thither to come ; and with calumnious art 770
 Of counterfeited truth, thus held their ears.
 Thrones, dominations, princedom, virtues, pow'rs,
 If these magnificent titles yet remain
 Not merely titular, since by decree
 Another now hath to himself ingross'd 775
 All pow'r, and us eclips'd under the name
 Of King anointed : for whom all this haste
 Of midnight-march, and hurried meeting here,
 This only to consult how we may best,
 With what may be devis'd of honours new, 780
 Receive him, coming to receive from us
 Knee tribute yet unpaid, prostration vile,
 Too much to one, but double how endur'd,
 To one and to his image now proclaim'd,
 But what if better counsels might erect 785
 Our minds, and teach us to cast off this yoke ?
 Will you submit your necks, and chuse to bend
 The supple knee ? Ye will not, if I trust
 To know ye right, or if you know yourselves
 Natives and sons of heav'n possess'd before 790

¶ PARADISE LOST.

131

ne : and if not equal all, yet free,
 ly free ; for orders and degrees
 t with liberty, but well consist.
 an in reason then, or right, assume
 chy over such as live by right 795
 uals, if in pow'r and splendour less,
 dom equal ? or can introduce
 ad edict on us, who without law
 t ? much less for this to be our Lord,
 sok for adoration, to th' abuse 800
 se imperial titles, which assert
 ing ordain'd to govern, not to servé.
 s far his bold discourse without control
 idience ; when among the Seraphim
 , than whom none with more zeal ador'd 805
 city', and divine commands obey'd,
 up; and in a flame of zeal severe
 irrent of his fury thus oppos'd.
 'gument blasphemous, false and proud !
 which no ear ever to hear in heav'n 810
 ed, least of all from thee, ingrate,
 ce thyself so high above thy peers.
 hou with impious obloquy condemn
 ist decree of God, pronounc'd and sworn,
 o his only Son, by right endu'd 815
 egal sceptre, ev'ry soul in heav'n
 end the knee, and in that honour due
 s him rightful King ? Unjust, thou say'st,
 unjust, to bind with laws the free,
 qual over equals to let reign, 820
 ver all with unsucceeded power.
 hou give law to God ? shalt thou dispute
 im the points of liberty, who made
 what thou art, and form'd the powers of heav'n
 is he pleas'd, and circumscrib'd their being ? 825
 ' experience taught, we know how good,
 four good and of our dignity
 rovident he is ; how far from thought
 ke us less, bent rather to exalt
 appy state, under one head more near 830
 But to grant it thee unjust,

PARADISE LOST.

B O O K VI.

THE ARGUMENT.

Raphael continues to relate how Michael and Gabriel were sent forth to battle against Satan and his angels. The first fight described: Satan and his powers retire under night: he calls a council, invents devilish engines, which in the second day's fight put Michael and his angels to some disorder; but they at length pulling up mountains, overwhelmed both the force and machines of Satan; yet the tumult not so ending, God on the third day sends Messiah his son, for whom he had reserved the glory of that victory: he in the power of his Father coming to the place, and causing all his legions to stand still on either side, with his chariot and thunder driving into the midst of his enemies, pursues them, unable to resist, towards the walls of heaven; which opening, they leap down with horror and confusion into the place of punishment prepared for them in the deep: Messiah returns with triumph to his Father.

A L L night the dreadless angel, unpursu'd,
Through heav'n's wide champain held his way,
till morn,
Wak'd by the circling hours, with rosy hand
Unbarr'd the gates of light. There is a cave
Within the mount of God, fast by his throne,
Where light and darkness in perpetual round
Lodge and dislodge by turns, which makes through
Graceful vicissitude, like day and night; [heav'n
Light issues forth, and at the other door
Obsequious darkness enters, till her hour
To veil the heav'n, though darkness there might well
Seem twilight here: and now went forth the morn
Such as in highest heav'n array'd in gold
Empyrean; from before her vanish'd night,

rough with orient beams; when all the plain 15
 d with thick embattled squadrons bright,
 ts and flaming arms, and fiery steeds
 ing blaze on blaze, first met his view.
 e perceiv'd, war in procinct; and found
 ly known what he for news had thought 20
 re reported; gladly then he mix'd
 g those friendly pow'rs, who him receiv'd
 oy and acclamations loud, that one,
 f so many myriads fall'n, yet one
 id not lost. On to the sacred hill 25
 ed him high applauded, and present
 the seat supreme; from whence a voice,
 midst a golden cloud, thus mild was heard.
 ant of God, well done, well hast thou fought;
 etter fight, who single hast maintain'd 30
 t revolted multitudes the cause
 th, in word mightier than they in arms;
 or the testimony of truth hast borne
 fal reproach, far worse to bear
 violence: for this was all thy care, 35
 id approv'd in fight of God, though worlds
 thee perverse. The easier conquest now
 ns thee, aided by this host of friends,
 n thy foes more glorious to return
 corn'd thou did'st depart; and to subdue 40
 ce, who reason for their law refuse,
 reason for their law, and for their King
 s, who by right of merit reigns.
 ichael, of celestial armies prince;
 ou in military prowess next, 45
 l, lead forth to battle these my sons
 ble, lead forth my armed saints,
 usands and by millions, rang'd for fight,
 in number to that godless crew
 ious: them with fire and hostile arms 50
 s assault; and to the brow of heav'n
 ng, drive them out from God and bliss,
 eir place of punishment, the gulf
 rtarus, which ready opens wide
 ry chaos to receive their fall. 55

Have rais'd incessant armies to defeat
 Thy folly ; or with solitary hand
 Reaching beyond all limit, at one blow, 140
 Unaided, could have finish'd thee, and whelm'd
 Thy legions under darkness ; but thou seest
 All are not of thy train ; there be who faith
 Prefer and piety to God, though then
 To thee not visible, when I alone 145
 Seem'd in thy world erroneous to dissent
 From all : my seest thou seest ; now learn too late
 How few sometimes may know, when thousands err.
 Whom the grand foe, with scornful eye askeance,
 Thus answer'd. Ill for thee, but in wish'd hour 150
 Of my revenge, first sought for thou return'st
 From flight, seditious Angel, to receive
 Thy merited reward, the first essay
 Of this right hand provok'd, since first that tongue,
 Inspir'd with contradiction, durst oppose 155
 A third part of the gods, in synod met!
 Their deities to assert, who while they feel
 Vigour divine within them. can allow
 Omnipotence to none. But well thou com'st
 Before thy fellows, ambitious to win 160
 From me some plume, that thy success may show
 Destruction to the rest : this pause between
 (Unanswer'd lest thou boast) to let thee know ;
 At first I thought that liberty and heav'n
 To heav'nly souls had been all one : but now 165
 I see that most through sloth had rather serve,
 Ministring sp'rits, train'd up in feast and song ;
 Such hast thou arm'd, the minstrelsy of heav'n,
 Servility with freedom to contend,
 As both their deeds compar'd this day shall prove. 170
 To whom in brief thus Abdiel stern reply'd.
 Apostate, still thou err'st. nor end wilt find
 Of erring, from the path of truth remote :
 Unjustly thou deprav'st it with the name
 Of servitude, to serve whom God ordains, 175
 Or Nature ; God and Nature bid the same,
 When he who rules is worthiest, and excels
 Them whom he governs. This is servitude,

I. PARADISE LOST. 139

th' unwise, or him who hath rebell'd
 his worthier, as thine now serve thee, 180
 not free, but to thyself intrall'd
 lly dar'st our minist'ring upbraid.
 iou in hell, thy kingdom; let me serve
 n God ever blest, and his divine
 obey, worthiest to be obey'd; 185
 ns in hell, not realms, expect; mean while
 e return'd, as erst thou saidst, from flight,
 eting on thy impious crest receive.
 'ing, a noble stroke he lifted high,
 ung not, but so swift with tempest fell 190
 proud crest of Satan, that no sight,
 ion of swift thought, less could his shield
 n intercept: ten paces huge,
 recoil'd; the tenth on bended knee,
 y spear upstay'd; as if on earth 195
 nder ground, or waters forcing way,
 g had push'd a mountain from his seat,
 ik with all his pines. Amazement seiz'd
 el thrones, but greater rage, to see
 d'd their mightiest; ours joy fill'd, and shout,
 of victory, and fierce desire 201
 :: whereat Michael bid sound
 h-angel trumpet; through the vast of heav'n
 ed, and the faithful armies rung
 i to the high'est: nor stood at gaze 205
 erse legions, nor less hideous join'd
 rid shock Now storming fury rose,
 mour such as heard in heav'n till now
 ver; arms on armour clashing bray'd
 : discord, and the madding wheels 210
 n chariots rag'd; dire was the noise
 ist; over head and dismal hiss
 darts in flaming vollics flew,
 ing vaulted either host with fire,
 r fiery cope together rush'd 215
 ttles main, with ruinous assault
 xtinguishable rage: all heav'n
 led; and had earth been then, all earth
 ber center shook. What wonder? when

Millions of fierce encount'ring angels fought 220
 On either side, the least of whom could wield
 These elements, and arm him with the force
 Of all their regions: how much more of pow'r
 Army' against army numberless to raise
 Dreadful combustion warring, and disturb, 225
 Though not destroy, their happy native seat;
 Had not th' eternal King omnipotent,
 From his strong hold of heav'n, high over rul'd
 And limited their might, though number'd such
 As each divided legion might have seem'd 230
 A numerous host, in strength each armed hand
 A legion, led in fight, yet leader seem'd
 Each warrior single as in chief, expert
 When to advance, or stand, or turn the sway
 Of battle, open when, and when to close 235
 The ridges of grim war: no thought of flight,
 None of retreat, no unbecoming deed
 That argu'd fear; each on himself rely'd,
 As only in his arm the moment lay
 Of victory: deeds of eternal fame 240
 Were done, but infinite; for wide was spread
 That war, and various, sometimes on firm ground
 A standing fight: then soaring on main wing
 Tormented all the air; all air seem'd then
 Conflicting fire. Long time in even scale 245
 The battle hung; till Satan, who that day
 Prodigious pow'r had shown, and met in arms
 No equal, ranging through the dire attack
 Of fighting Seraphim confus'd, at length
 Saw white the sword of Michael smote, and fell'd 250
 Squadrons at once; with huge two-handed sway
 Brandish'd aloft, the horrid edge came down
 Wide wasting; such destruction to withstand
 He hasted, and oppos'd the rocky orb
 Of tenfold adamant, his ample shield, 255
 A vast circumference. At his approach
 The great Arch-angel from his warlike toil
 Surceas'd, and glad, as hoping here to end
 Intestine war in heav'n, th' arch-foe subdu'd
 Or captive dragg'd in chains, with hostile frown 260

usage all inflam'd first thus began.
 hor of ev'il, unknown till thy revolt,
 d in heav'n, now plenteous, as thou seest
 acts of hateful strife, hateful to all,
 h heaviest by just measure on thyself, 265
 y adherents: how hast thou disturb'd
 i's blessed peace, and into nature brought
 , uncreated till the crime
 rebellion? how hast thou instill'd
 alicie into thousands, once upright 270
 uthful, now prov'd false? But think not here
 ble holy rest; heav'n casts thee out
 all her confines. Heav'n, the seat of bliss,
 ; not the works of violence and war.
 then, and evil go with thee along, 275
 fspring, to the place of evil, hell,
 and thy wicked crew; there mingle broils,
 is avenging sword begin thy doom,
 ne more sudden vengeance wing'd from God
 itate thee with augmented pain. 280
 pake the Prince of angels; to whom thus
 rversary. Nor think thou with the wind
 y threats to awe whom yet with deeds
 anst not. Hast thou turn'd the least of these
 ht, or if to fall, but that they rise 285
 quish'd, easier to transact with me
 hou should'st hope, imperious, and with threats
 use me hence? Err not, that so shall end
 rise which thou call'st evil, but we style
 rise of glory; which we mean to win, 290
 n this heav'n itself into the hell
 fablest; here however to dwell free,
 to reign: mean while thy utmost force,
 in him nam'd Almighty to thy aid,
 ot, but have fought thee far and nigh. 295
 y ended parle, and both address for fight
 akable; for who, though with the tongue
 gels, can relate, or to what things
 on earth conspicuous, that may list
 n imagination to such height 300
 dlike pow'r? for likest-gods they seem'd,

Stood they or mov'd, in stature, motion, arms,
 Fit to decide the empire of great Heav'n.
 Now wav'd their fiery swords, and in the air
 Made horrid circles; two broad suns their shields 305
 Blaz'd opposite, while expectation stood
 In horror: from each hand with speed retir'd,
 Where erst was thickest fight, th' angelic throng,
 And left large field, unsafe within the wind
 Of such commotion: such as, to set forth 310
 Great things by small, if nature's concord broke,
 Among the constellations war were sprung,
 Two planets, rushing from aspect malign
 Of fiercest opposition, in mid sky,
 Should combat, and their jarring spheres confound. 315
 Together both, with next t' Almighty arm
 Uplifted imminent, one stroke they aim'd
 That might determine, and not need repeat,
 As not of pow'r at once; nor odds appear'd
 In might or swift prevention; but the sword 320
 Of Michael from the armoury of God
 Was giv'n him temper'd so, that neither keen
 Nor solid might resist that edge: it met
 The sword of Satan, with steep force to smite
 Descending, and in half cut sheer; nor stay'd, 325
 But with swift wheel reverse, deep ent'ring, shar'd
 All his right side; then Satan first knew pain,
 And writh'd him to and fro convolv'd. so sore
 The griding sword with discontinuous wound
 Pass'd through him: but th' ethereal substance clos'd
 Not long divisible; and from the gash 331
 A stream of nest'rous humour issuing flow'd
 Sanguine, such as celestial sp'rits may bleed,
 And all his armour stain'd, ere while so bright.
 Forthwith on all sides to his aid was run 335
 By Angels many and strong, who interpos'd
 Defence; while others bore him on their shields
 Back to his chariot, where it stood retir'd
 From off the files of war; there they him laid
 Gnashing for anguish, and despite, and shame, 340
 To find himself not matchlets, and his pride
 Humbled by such rebuke, so far beneath

nfidence to equal God in pow'r.
 on he heal'd; for sp'rits that live throughout
 n ev'ry part, not as frail man 345
 'ails, heart or head, liver or reins,
 t but by annihilating die;
 their liquid texture mortal wound
 e, no more than can the fluid air:
 art they live, all head, all eye, all ear, 350
 ellect, all sense; and as they please,
 imb themselves, and colour, shape, or size
 e, as like them best, condense or rare.
 n while in other parts like deeds deserv'd
 rial, where the might of Gabriel fought, 355
 ith fierce ensigns pierc'd the deep array
 loch, furious king; who him defy'd,
 t his chariot-wheels to drag him bound
 en'd, not from the Holy One of heav'n
 n'd his tongue blasphemous; but anon 360
 cloven to the waist, with shatter'd arms
 ncouth pain fled bellowing. On each wing
 nd Raphael, his vaunting foe,
 h huge, and in a rock of diamond arm'd,
 ish'd Adramelech, and Asmadai, 365
 otent Thrones, that to be less than gods
 n'd, but meaner thoughts learn'd in their flight,
 ed with ghastly wounds through plate and mail.
 od unmindful Abdiel to annoy
 hiest crew, but with redoubled blow 370
 nd Arioch, and the violence
 miel scorch'd and blasted, overthrew.
 ight relate of thousands, and their names
 ze here on earth; but those elect
 s, contented with their fame in heav'n, 375
 ot the praise of men: the other sort,
 ht though wondrous, and in acts of war,
 renown less eager, yet by doom
 'd from heav'n and sacred memory,
 efs in dark oblivion let them dwell. 380
 ength from truth divided, and from just,
 ble, naught merits but dispraise
 omomy; yet to glory aspires,

Vain glorious, and through infamy seeks fame :
 Therefore eternal silence be their doom. 385
 And now their mightiest quell'd, the battle swerv'd
 With many an inroad gor'd ; deformed rout
 Enter'd, and foul disorder ; all the ground
 With shiver'd armour strown, and on a heap
 Chariot and charioter lay overturn'd, 390
 And fiery foaming steeds ; what stood, recoil'd
 O'er-wearied, through the faint Satanic host
 Defensive scarce, or with pale fear surpris'd,
 Then first with fear surpris'd, and sense of pain,
 Fled ignominious, to such evil brought 395
 By sin of disobedience, till that hour
 Not liable to fear, or flight, or pain.
 Far otherwise th' inviolable saints,
 In cubic phalanx firm, advanc'd entire,
 Invulnerable, impenetrably arm'd ; 400
 Such high advantages their innocence
 Gave them above their foes, not to have sinn'd,
 Not to have disobey'd ; in fight they stood
 Unwearied, unobnoxious to be pain'd
 By wound, though from their place by violence mov'd.
 Now night her course began, and over heav'n 406
 Inducing darkness, grateful truce impos'd,
 And silence on the odious din of war :
 Under her cloudy covert both retir'd,
 Victor and vanquish'd. On the foughten field 410
 Michael and his Angels prevalent
 Incamping, plac'd in guard their watches round,
 Cherubic waving fires ; on th' other part,
 Satan with his rebellious disappear'd,
 Far in the dark dislodg'd ; and void of rest, 415
 His potentates to council call'd by night ;
 And in the midst thus undismay'd began.
 O now in danger try'd, now known in arms
 Not to be over pow'r'd. companions dear,
 Found worthy not of liberty alone 420
 Too mean pretence, but what we more effect,
 Honour, dominion, glory, and renown ;
 Who have sustain'd one day in doubtful fight,
 (And if one day, why not eternal days ?)

VI. PARADISE LOST. 145

t heav'n's Lord had powerfull'est to fend 425
 nst us from about his throne, and judg'd
 :ient to subdue us to his will,
 roves not so : then fallible, it seems,
 ture we may deem him, though till now
 ifcient thought. True is, less firmly arm'd, 430
 : disadvantage we endur'd, and pain,
 ow not known, but known as soon contemn'd ;
 now we find this our empyreal form
 able of mortal injury,
 rishable, and though pierc'd with wound, 435
 closing, and by native vigour heal'd.
 'il then so small as easy think
 remedy ; perhaps more valid arms,
 ons more violent, when next we meet,
 serve to better us, and worse our foes, 440
 qual what between us made the odds,
 iture none : if other hidden cause
 them superior, while we can preserve
 ert our minds, and understanding sound,
 search and consultation will disclose. 445
 e fat ; and in th' assembly next upstood
 ch, of principalities the prime ;
 ne he stood escap'd from cruel fight,
 toil'd, his riven arms to havock hewn,
 cloudy in aspect thus answ'ring spake. 450
 eliverer from new lords, leader to free
 yment of our right as gods ; yet hard
 gods, and too unequal work we find,
 inst unequal arms to fight in pain,
 inst unpain'd, impassive ; from which evil 455
 must needs ensue ; for what avails
 ur or strength, though matchless, quell'd with pain
 ch all subdues, and makes remis the hands
 ightiest ? Sense of pleasure we may well
 e out of life, perhaps, and not repine ; 460
 live content, which is the calmest life :
 pain is perfect misery, the worst
 vils ; and excessive, overturns
 atience. He who therefore can invent
 i *what more forcible* we may offend 465

Our yet unwounded enemies, or arm
 Ourselves with like defence, to me deserves
 No less than for deliverance what we owe.
 Whereto with look compos'd Satan reply'd.
 Not uninvented that, which thou aright 470
 Believ'st so main to our success, I bring.
 Which of us who beholds the bright surface
 Of this ethereous mould whereon we stand,
 This continent of spacious heav'n, adorn'd,
 With plant, fruit, flow'r, ambrosial, gems and gold;
 Whose eye so superficially surveys 476
 These things, as not to mind from whence they grow
 Deep under ground, materials dark and crude,
 Of spirit'ous and fiery spume, till touch'd
 With heav'n's ray, and temper'd, they shoot forth 480
 So beautiful, op'ning to the ambient light?
 These in their dark nativity the deep
 Shall yield us, pregnant with infernal flame;
 Which into hollow engines, long and round,
 Thick ramm'd, at th' other bore with touch of fire 485
 Dilated and infuriate, shall send forth
 From far, with thund'ring noise, among our foes
 Such implements of mischief, as shall dash
 To pieces, and o'erwhelm whatever stands
 Adverse, that they shall fear we have disarm'd 490
 The Thund'rer of his only dreaded bolt.
 Nor long shall be our labour; yet ere dawn,
 Effect shall end our wish. Mean while revive;
 Abandon fear; to strength and counsel join'd
 Think nothing hard, much less to be despair'd. 495
 He ended, and his words their drooping cheer
 Enlighten'd, and their languish'd hope reviv'd.
 Th' invention all admir'd, and each, how he
 To be th' inventor miss'd; so easy' it seem'd 499
 Once found, which yet unfound most would have thought
 Impossible. Yet haply, if thy race
 In future days, if malice should abound,
 Some one intent on mischief, or inspir'd
 With devilish machinations, might devise
 Like instruments to plague the sons of men 505
 For sin, on war and mutual slaughter bent.

hwith from council to the work they flew ;
 e arguing flood ; innumerable hands
 e ready ; in a moment up they turn'd
 e celestial soil, and saw beneath 510
 original of nature in their crude
 ception ; sulphur'ous and nitrous foam
 y found, they mingled, and with subtle art,
 osted and adusted they reduc'd
 lackest grain, and into store convey'd ; 515
 hidden veins digg'd up (nor hath this earth
 ails unlike) of mineral and stone,
 reof to found their engines and their balls
 issive ruin ; part incentive reed
 ide, pernicious with one touch to fire. 520
 ll ere day-spring, under conscious night,
 et they finish'd, and in order set,
 i silent circumspection unespy'd.
 ow when fair morn orient in heav'n appear'd,
 ose the victor Angels, and to arms 525
 matin trumpet sung : in arms they stood
 olden panoply, refulgent host,
 i banded ; others from the dawning hills
 k'd round, and scouts each coast light-armed scour,
 i quarter, to descry the distant foe. 530
 ere lodg'd, or whither fled, or if for flight,
 otion or in halt : him soon they met
 er spread ensigns moving nigh, in slow
 firm battalion ; back with speediest sail
 hiel, of Cherubim the swiftest wing, 535
 e fly'ing, and in mid air aloud thus cry'd.
 rm warriors, arm for fight ; the foe at hand,
 om fled we thought, will save us long pursuit
 day ; fear not his flight ; so thick a cloud
 comes, and settled in his face I see 540
 resolution, and secure : let each
 adamantine coat gird well, and each
 well his helm, gripe fast his orbid shield,
 e ev'n or high ; for this day will pour down,
 conjecture ought, no drizzling show'r, 545
 rattling storm of arrows barb'd with fire.
 o warn'd he them, aware themselves, and soon

In order, quit of all impediment ;
 Instant without disturb they took alarm
 And onward move embattled : when behold 550
 Not distant far with heavy pace the foe
 Approaching gross and huge, in hollow cube
 Training his devilish enginery, impal'd
 On ev'ry side with shadowing squadrons deep,
 To hide the fraud. At interview both stood 555
 A-while ; but suddenly at head appear'd
 Satan, and thus was heard commanding loud.
 Vanguard, to right and left the front unfold ;
 That all may see who hate us, how we seek
 Peace and composure, and with open breast 560
 Stand ready to receive them, if they like
 Our overture, and turn not back perverse :
 But that I doubt ; however witness heaven,
 Heav'n witness thou anon, while we discharge
 Freely our part ; ye who appointed stand, 565
 Do as you have in charge, and briefly touch
 What we propound, and loud that all may hear.
 So scoffing in ambiguous words, he scarce
 Had ended ; when to right and left the front
 Divided, and to either flank retir'd : 570
 Which to our eyes discover'd, new and strange,
 A triple mounted row of pillars laid
 On wheels (for like to pillars most they seem'd,
 Or hollow'd bodies made of oak or fir,
 With branches lopt, in wood or mountain fell'd) 575
 Brass, iron, stony mold, had not their mouths
 With hideous orifice gap'd on us wide,
 Portending hollow truce : at each behind
 A Seraph stood, and in his hand a reed
 Stood waving tipt with fire ; while we suspense 580
 Collected stood within our thoughts amus'd
 Not long ; for sudden all at once their reeds
 Put forth, and to a narrow vent apply'd
 With nicest touch. Immediate in a flame, 584
 But soon obscur'd with smoke, all heav'n appear'd,
 From those deep throated engines belch'd, whose roar
 Imbowell'd with outrageous noise the air,
 And all her entrails tore, disgorging foul

r devilish glut, chain'd thunderbolts, and hail
 on globes ; which on the victor host 590
 all'd, with such impetuous fury smote,
 t whom they hit, none on their feet might stand,
 ough standing else as rocks, but down they fell
 housands. Angel on Arch-angel roll'd ;
 sooner for their arms ; unarm'd they might 595
 e easily, as sp'rits evaded swift
 uick contraction or remove ; but now
 l dissipation follow'd, and forc'd rout ;
 serv'd it to relax their ferrid files.
 at should they do ? if on they rush'd, repulse 600
 eated, and indecent overthrow
 bled, would render them yet more despis'd,
 l to their foes a laughter ; for in view
 d rank'd of Seraphim another row,
 osture to displode their second tire 605
 hunder : back defeated to return
 y worse abhorr'd. Satan beheld their plight,
 l to his mates thus in derision call'd.
 friends, why come not on these victors proud ?
 while they fierce were coming ; and when we, 610
 entertain them fair with open front
 l breast (what could we more ?) propounded terms
 omposition, straight they chang'd their minds,
 v off, and into strange vagaries fell,
 hey would dance ; yet for a dance they seem'd 615
 ewhat extravagant and wild, perhaps
 joy of offer'd peace : but I suppose,
 ur proposals once again were heard,
 should compel them to a quick result.
 whom thus Belial in like gamefome mood. 620
 eader, the terms we sent were terms of weight,
 ard contents, and full of force urg'd home,
 h as we might perceive amus'd them all,
 l stumbled many : who receives them right,
 l need from head to foot well understand ; 625
 understood, this gift they have besides,
 y show us when our foes walk not upright.
 o they among themselves in pleasant vein
 od scoffing, heighten'd in their thoughts beyond

All doubt of victory ; eternal might 639
 To match with their inventions they presum'd
 So easy', and of his thunder made a scorn,
 And all his host derided, while they stood
 A while in trouble : but they stood not long :
 Rage prompted them at length, and found them arms
 Against such hellish mischief fit t' oppose. 636
 Forthwith (behold the excellence, the pow'r,
 Which God hath in his mighty angels plac'd)
 Their arms away they threw, and to the hills
 (For Earth hath this variety from Heav'n 640
 Of pleasure situate in hill and dale)
 Light as the light'ning glimpse they ran, they flew ;
 From their foundations loos'ning to and fro,
 They pluck'd the seated hills, with all their load,
 Rocks, waters, woods, and by the shaggy tops 645
 Up lifting bore them in their hands. Amaze,
 Be sure, and terror, seiz'd the rebel host,
 When coming towards them so dread they saw
 The bottom of the mountains upward turn'd ;
 Till on those curst engines triple-row 650
 They saw them whelm'd, and all their confidence
 Under the weight of mountains buried deep ;
 Themselves invaded next, and on their heads
 Main promontories flung, which in the air, 654
 Came shadowing, and oppress'd whole legions arm'd ;
 Their armour help'd their harm, crush'd in and bruis'd
 Into their substance pent, which wrought them pain
 Implacable, and many a dolorous groan,
 Long struggling underneath, ere they could wind
 Out of such pris'on, though sp'rits of purest light, 660
 Purest at first, now gross by sinning grown.
 The rest, in imitation, to like arms
 Betook them, and the neighb'ring hills up tore :
 So hills amid the air encounter'd hills
 Hurl'd to and fro with jaculation dire, 665
 That under ground they fought in dismal shade ;
 Infernal noise ; war seem'd a civil game
 To this uproar ; horrid confusion heap'd
 Upon confusion rose. And now all heav'n
 Had gone to wrack, with ruin overspread, 670

th' Almighty Father where he sits
 in his sanctuary of heav'n secure,
 sitting on the sum of things, foreseen
 the vault, and permitted all, advis'd :
 great purpose he might so fulfill, 675
 for his anointed Son aveng'd
 his enemies. and to declare
 his power on him transferr'd : whence to his Son,
 for of his throne, he thus began.
 Hence of my glory, Son belov'd, 680
 whose face invisible is held
 what by deity I am,
 whose hand what by decree I do,
 Omnipotence, two days are past,
 as we compute the days of heav'n, 685
 Michael and his powers went forth to tame
 the disobedient : fore hath been their fight,
 the first was. when two such foes met arm'd ;
 themselves I left them ; and thou know'st
 their creation they were form'd, 690
 at sin hath impair'd ; which yet hath wrought
 this war, for I suspend their doom ;
 in perpetual fight they needs must last
 and no solution will be found :
 tried hath perform'd what war can do, 695
 disorder'd rage let loose the reins,
 maintains as with weapons arm'd ; which makes
 work in heav'n, and dang'rous to the main.
 Two days are therefore past, the third is thine ;
 I have ordain'd it, and thus far 700
 I have transferr'd, that the glory may be thine
 to fight this great war, since none but thou
 art fit. Into thee such virtue and grace
 I have transfus'd, that all may know
 in heav'n and hell thy pow'r above compare ; 705
 that all thy perverse commotion govern'd thus,
 I have bestow'd thee worthiest to be Heir
 of my Kingdoms. to be Heir, and to be King
 of the world, and of the earth, and of the
 dominion thy deserved right.
 Thou mightiest, in thy Father's might, 710
 to sit upon my throne, and by my chariot,
 guide the rapid wheels

That shake heav'n's basis ; bring forth all my war,
 My bow and thunder, my almighty arms
 Gird on, and sword upon thy puissant thigh ;
 Pursue these sons of darkness, drive them out 715
 From all heav'n's bounds into the utter deep ;
 There let them learn, as likes them, to despise
 God, and Messiah his anointed King.

He said, and on his Son with rays direct
 Shone full ; he all his Father full express'd 720
 Ineffably into his face receiv'd ;
 And thus the Filial Godhead answer'd spake.

O Father, O Supreme of heav'nly Thrones,
 First, Highest, Holiest, Best ; thou always seek'st
 To glorify thy Son, I always thee, 725
 As is most just : this I my glory' account,
 My exaltation, and my whole delight,
 That thou, in me well pleas'd, declar'st thy will
 Fulfill'd, which to fulfil is all my bliss.

Sceptre and pow'r, thy giving, I assume ; 730
 And gladlier shall resign, when in the end
 Thou shalt be all in all, and I in thee
 For ever, and in me all whom thou lov'st :
 But whom thou hat'st, I hate, and can put on
 Thy terrors, as I put thy mildness on, 735
 Image of thee in all things ; and shall soon,
 Arm'd with thy might, rid heav'n of these rebell'd,
 To their prepar'd ill mansion driven down,
 To chains of darkness, and th' undying worm,
 That from thy just obedience could revolt, 740
 Whom to obey is happiness entire.

Then shall thy saints unmix'd, and from th' impure
 Far separate, circling thy holy mount,
 Unfeigned Halleluiahs to thee sing,
 Hymns of high praise, and I among them chief. 745

So said, he, o'er his sceptre bowing, rose
 From the right hand of glory where he sat.
 And the third sacred morn began to shine, [sound
 Dawning through heav'n. Forth rush'd with whirlwind
 The chariot of Paternal Deity, 750
 Flashing thick flames, wheel within wheel undrawn,
 Itself instinct with spirit, but convoy'd

VI. PARADISE LOST. 153

ir Cherubic shapes ; four faces each
 vondrous ; as with stars, their bodies all,
 wings, were set with eyes, with eyes the wheels
 yl, and careering fires between ; 756
 heir-heads a crystal firmament,
 on a sapphir throne, inlaid with pure
 r, and colours of the show'ry arch,
 celestial panoply arm'd 760
 liant Urim, work divinely wrought,
 ded ; at his right hand victory
 gle-wing'd ; beside him hung his bow,
 uiver with three-bolted thunder stor'd ;
 rom about him fierce effusion roll'd 765
 oke, and bick'ring flame, and sparkles dire.
 ded with ten thousand thousand faints,
 ward came : far off his coming shone ;
 wenty thousand (I their number heard)
 sts of God, half on each hand, were seen. 770
 the wings of Cherub rode sublime
 e crystalline sky, in sapphir thron'd,
 ions far and wide ; but by his own
 en : them unexpected joy surpriz'd,
 the great ensign of Messiah blaz'd 775
 by Angels borne, his sign in heav'n ;
 : whose conduct Michael soon reduc'd
 rmy, circumfus'd on either wing,
 : their head inbodied all in one.
 e him pow'r divine his way prepar'd ; 780
 ; command th' uprooted hills retir'd
 to his place ; they heard his voice, and went
 uious ; Heav'n his wonted face renew'd,
 with fresh flow'rets hill and valley smil'd.
 is saw his hapless foes, but stood obdur'd, 785
 to rebellious fight rallied their powers,
 fate, hope conceiving from despair.
 av'nly sp'rits could such perverseness dwell,
 o convince the proud what signs avail,
 nders move th' obdurate to relent ? 790
 harden'd more by what might most reclaim,
 ing to see his glory, at the sight
 envy ; and aspiring to his height,

Stood reibattled fierce, by force or fraud
 Weening to prosper, and at length prevail 795
 Against God and Messiah, or to fall
 In universal ruin lost: they now
 To final battle drew, disdain'g flight,
 Or faint retreat; when the great Son of God
 To all his host on either hand thus spake. 800
 Stand still in bright array, ye Saints, here stand,
 Ye angels arm'd, this day from battle rest;
 Faithful hath been your warfare, and of God
 Accepted, fearless in his righteous cause;
 And as ye have receiv'd, so have ye done 805
 Invisibly, but of this cursed crew
 The punishment to other hand belongs;
 Vengeance is his, or whose he sole appoints:
 Number to this day's work is not ordain'd,
 Nor multitude: stand on, and behold 810
 God's indignation on these godless pour'd
 By me; not you, but me, they have despis'd,
 Yet envied; against me is all their rage,
 Because the Father, t' whom in heav'n supreme
 Kingdom, and pow'r, and glory appertains, 815
 Hath honour'd me, according to his will.
 Therefore to me their doom he hath assign'd,
 That they may have their wish, to try with me
 In battle which the stronger proves, they all,
 Or I alone against them, since by strength 820
 They measure all, of other excellence
 Not emulous, nor care who them excels;
 Nor other strife with them do I vouchsafe.
 So spake the Son, and into terror chang'd
 His count'nance too severe to be beheld, 825
 And full of wrath bent on his enemies.
 At once the Four spread out their starry wings
 With dreadful shade contiguous, and the orbs
 Of his fierce chariot roll'd, as with the sound
 Of torrent floods, or of a num'rous host. 830
 He on his impious foes right onward drove,
 Gloomy as night; under his burning wheels
 The stedfast empyrean shook throughout,
 All but the throne itself of God. Full soon

VI. PARADISE LOST. 155

g them be arriv'd, in his right hand 835
 ing ten thousand thunders, which he sent
 : him, such as in their soul infix'd
 es : they astonish'd all resistance lost,
 urage ; down their idle weapons dropt :
 ields, and helmets, and helmed heads he rode 840
 rones and mighty Seraphim prostrate,
 wish'd the mountains now might be again
 n on them, as a shelter from his ire.
 fs on either side tempestuous fell
 rows, from the fourfold-visag'd Four 845
 & with eyes, and from the living wheels
 & alike with multitude of eyes ;
 pirit in them rul'd, and ev'ry eye
 lightning, and shot forth pernicious fire
 g th' accurs'd, that wither'd all their strength,
 f their wonted vigour left them drain'd, 851
 fted, spiritless, afflicted, fall'n.
 lf his strength he put not forth, but check'd
 nder in mid volley ; for he meant
 o destroy, but root them out of heav'n : 855
 verthrown he rais'd, and as a herd
 ats or timorous flock together throng'd,
 them before him thunder struck, pursu'd
 terrors and with furies to the bounds
 rystal wall of heav'n ; which op'ning wide, 860
 inward, and a spacious gap disclos'd
 e wasteful deep : the monstrous sight
 : them with horror backward, but far worse
 them behind : headlong themselves they threw
 from the verge of heav'n ; eternal wrath 865
 after them to the bottomless pit.
 I heard th' insufferable noise, hell saw
 n running from Heav'n, and would have fled
 hted ; but strict Fate had cast too deep
 ark foundations, and too fast had bound. 870
 days they fell : confounded Chaos roar'd,
 elt tenfold confusion in their fall
 igh his anarchy, so huge a rout
 iber'd him with ruin : Hell at last
 ing receiv'd them whole, and on them clos'd ;

Hell, their fit habitation, fraught with fire 876
 Unquenchable, the house of woe and pain.
 Disburden'd heav'n rejoic'd, and soon repair'd
 Her mural breach, returning whence it roll'd.
 Sole victor from th' expulsion of his foes, 880
 Messiah his triumphal chariot turn'd ;
 To meet him all his saints, who silent stood
 Eye-witnesses of his Almighty acts,
 With jubilee advanc'd : and as they went,
 Shaded with branching palm, each order bright, 885
 Sung triumph, and him sung victorious King,
 Son, Heir, and Lord, to whom dominion giv'n,
 Worthiest to reign : he celebrated rode
 Triumphant through mid heav'n, into the courts
 And temple of his mighty Father thron'd 890
 On high ; who into glory him receiv'd,
 Where now he sits at the right hand of bliss.
 Thus measuring things in heav'n by things on earth,
 At thy request, and that thou may'st beware
 By what is past, to thee I have reveal'd 895
 What might have else to human race been hid ;
 The discord which beset, and war in heav'n
 Among th' angelic pow'rs, and the deep fall
 Of those too high aspiring, who rebell'd
 With Satan : he who envies now thy state, 900
 Who now is plotting how he may seduce
 Thee also from obedience, that, with him
 Bereav'd of happiness thou may'st partake
 His punishment, eternal misery ;
 Which would be all his solace and revenge, 905
 As a despite done against the Most High,
 Thee once to gain companion of his woe.
 But listen not to his temptations : warn
 Thy weaker ; let it profit thee t' have hear'd
 By terrible example the reward 910
 Of disobedience ; firm they might have stood,
 Yet fell ; remember, and fear to transgress.

END OF THE SIXTH BOOK.

PARADISE LOST.

B O O K V I L

THE ARGUMENT.

Raphael, at the request of Adam, relates how and wherefore this world was first created; that God, after the expelling of Satan and his angels out of heaven, declared his pleasure to create another world, and other creatures to dwell therein; sends his Son with glory and attendance of angels to perform the work of creation in six days: the angels celebrate with hymns the performances thereof, and his reascension into heaven.

DESCEND from Heav'n, Urania, by that name
If rightly thou art call'd, whose voice divine
Following, above th' Olympian hill I soar,
Above the flight of Pegasean wing.
The meaning, not the name, I call: for thou . . . 5
Nor of the Muses nine, nor on the top
Of old Olympus dwell'ft; but heav'nly born,
Before the hills appear'd, or fountain flow'd,
Thou with eternal Wisdom didst converse,
Wisdom thy sister, and with her didst play . . . 10
In presence of th' Almighty Father, pleas'd
With thy celestial song. Up-led by thee,
Into the Heav'n of Heav'ns I have presum'd,
An earthly guest, and drawn empyreal air,
Thy temp'ring; with like safety guided down, . . . 15
Return me to my native element:
Lest from this flying unrein'd (as once
Bellerophon, though from a lower clime),
Dismounted, on th' Aleian field I fall,
Erroneous there to wander, and forlorn. . . 20
Half yet remains unsung, but narrow bound
Within the visible diurnal sphere;
Standing on earth, not rapt above the pole,
More safe I sing with moral voice, unchang'd
To hoarse or mute, though fall'n on evil days, . . . 25

On evil days though fall'n, and evil tongues ;
 In darkness, and with dangers compass'd round,
 And solitude ; yet not alone while thou
 Visit'st my slumbers nightly, or when morn
 Purples the east ; still govern thou my song, 30
 Urania, and fit audience find, though few.
 But drive far off the barbarous dissonance
 Of Bacchus and his revellers, the race
 Of that wild rout that tore the Thracian bard
 In Rhodope. where woods and rocks had ears 35
 To rapture, till the savage clamour drown'd
 Both harp and voice ; nor could the Muse defend
 Her son. So fail not thou. who thee implores ;
 For thou art heav'nly. the an empty dream.
 Say, goddess, what ensu'd when Raphael, 40
 The affable Arch-angel, had for warn'd
 Adam by dire example to beware
 Apostasy, by what befall in Heav'n
 To those apostates. lest the like befall
 In Paradise to Adam, or his race, 45
 Charg'd not to touch the interdicted tree,
 If they transgress, and slight that sole command,
 So easily obey'd, amid the choice
 Of all tastes else to please their appetite,
 Though wau'ring He with his consort'd Eve 50
 The story heard attentive, and was fill'd
 With admiration and deep muse to hear
 Of things so high and strange, things to their thought
 So unimaginable as hate in Heav'n,
 And war so near the peace of God in bliss, 55
 With such confusion : but the evil soon
 Driv'n back rebounded as a flood on those
 From whom it sprung, impossible to mix
 With blessedness. Whence Adam soon repeal'd
 The doubts that in his heart arose and now 60
 Led on, yet sinless, with desire to know
 What nearer might concern him, how this world
 Of Heav'n and earth conspicuous first began,
 When, and whereof created, for what cause,
 What within Eden, or without was done 65
 Before his memory, as one whose drougth
 Yet scarce allay'd still eyes the current stream,

I. PARADISE LOST. 159

quid murmur heard, new thirst excites,
 d thus to ask his heav'nly guest.
 things, and full of wonder in our ears, 70
 ring from this world, thou hast reveal'd,
 interpreter, by favour sent
 om the empyrean to forwarn
 y of what might else have been our loss,
 n which human knowledge could not reach :
 h to th' infinitely good we owe 76
 d thanks, and his admonishment
 with solemn purpose to observe
 dly his sov'reign will, the end
 we are. But since thou hast vouchsaf'd 80
 or our instruction to impart
 above earthly thought, which yet concern'd
 wing, as to highest wisdom seem'd,
 descend now lower, and relate
 ay no less perhaps avail us known, 85
 t began this Heav'n, which we behold
 so high, with moving fires adorn'd
 able ; and this which yields or fills
 e, the ambient air wide interfus'd
 ing round this florid earth ; what cause 90
 ie Creator, in his holy rest
 all eternity, so late to build
 s ; and the work begun, how soon
 l ; if unforbid thou may'st unfold
 e not to explore the secrets ask 95
 ernal empire, but the more
 nify his works, the more we know.
 great light of day yet wants to run
 his race though steep ; suspense in Heav'n
 thy voice, thy potent voice, he hears, 100
 nger will delay to hear thee tell
 eration, and the rising birth
 re from the unapparent deep :
 e star of ev'ning and the moon
 thy audience, night with her will bring 105
 and sleep list'ning to thee will watch ;
 an bid his absence, till thy song
 d dismiss thee ere the morning shine.

Thus Adam his illustrious guest besought ;
 And thus the Godlike Angel answer'd mild. 110
 This also thy request with caution ask'd
 Obtain : though to recount Almighty works
 What words or tongue of Seraph can suffice,
 Or heart of man suffice to comprehend ?
 Yet what thou canst attain, which best may serve 115
 To glorify the Maker, and infer
 Thee also happier, shall not be withheld
 Thy hearing ; such commission from above
 I have receiv'd to answer thy desire
 Of knowledge within bounds ; beyond abstain 120
 To ask, nor let thine own inventions hope
 Things not reveal'd, which th' invisible King,
 Only omniscient, hath suppress'd in night,
 To none communicate in Earth or Heav'n :
 Enough is left besides to search and know. 125
 But knowledge is as food, and needs no less
 Her temp'rance over appetite, to know
 In measure what the mind may well contain ;
 Oppresses else with surfeit, and soon turns
 Wisdom to folly, as nourishment to wind. 130
 Know then, that after Lucifer from Heav'n
 (So call him, brighter once amidst the host
 Of Angels, than that star the stars among)
 Fell with his flaming legions through the deep
 Into his place, and the great Son return'd 135
 Victorious with his saints, th' Omnipotent
 Eternal Father from his throne beheld
 Their multitude, and to his Son thus spake.
 At last our envious foe hath fail'd, who thought
 All like himself rebellous, by whose aid 140
 'Tis inaccessible high strength, the seat
 Of Deity supreme, us dispossest'd,
 He trusted to have seiz'd, and into fraud
 Drew many, whom their place knows here no more :
 Yet far the greater part have kept, I see, 145
 Their station : Heav'n yet populous retains
 Number sufficient to possess her realms
 Though wide, and this high temple to frequent
 With ministeries due and solemn rites ;
 But lest his heart exalt him in the harm 150

. PARADISE LOST. 161

one, to have dispeopled heav'n,
 ye fondly deem'd, I can repair
 ment, if such it be, to lose
 and in a moment will create
 world, out of one man a race 155
 numerable, there to dwell,
 till by degrees of merit rais'd,
 to themselves at length the way
 , under long obedience try'd ;
 be chang'd to Heav'n, and Heav'n to Earth
 lom, joy and union without end. 161
 le inhabit lax, ye Pow'rs of Heav'n ;
 my word, begotten Son, by thee
 rform : speak thou, and be it done ;
 adowing Sp'rit and might with thee 165
 ng ; ride forth, and bid the deep
 pointed bounds be heav'n and Earth,
 the deep, because I am who fill
 , nor vacuous the space.
 : uncircumscrib'd myself retire, 170
 not forth my goodness, which is free
 not, necessity and chance
 not me, and what I will is fate.
 e th' Almighty, and to what he spake
 d, the filial Godhead, gave effect 175
 e are the acts of God, more swift
 e or motion ; but to human ears
 ithout process of speech be told,
 ; earthly motion can receive.
 mph and rejoicing was in heav'n, 180
 :h was heard declar'd th' Almighty's will :
 ey sung to the most High, good will
 : men, and in their dwelling peace ;
 him, whose just avenging ire
 'n out th' ungodly from his sight, 185
 habitations of the just ; to him
 d praise, whose wisdom had ordain'd
 : of evil to create, instead
 : malign a better race to bring
 vacant room, and thence diffuse 190
 to worlds and ages infinite.

So sang the Hierarchies. Mean while the Son
 On his great expedition now appear'd,
 Girt with omnipotence, with radiance crown'd
 Of majesty divine; sapience and love 195
 Immense, and all his Father in him shone.
 About his chariot numberless were pour'd
 Cherub and Seraph, Potentates and Thrones,
 And Virtues, wing'd Sp'rits, and Chariots wing'd
 From th' armoury of God; where stand of old 200
 Myriads between two brazen mountains lodg'd
 Against a solemn day, harness'd at hand,
 Celestial equipage; and now came forth
 Spontaneous, for within them spirit liv'd,
 Attendant on their LORD: heav'n open'd wide 205
 Her ever-during gates, harmonious sound
 On golden hinges moving, to let forth
 The King of Glory in his pow'ful Word
 And Spirit coming to create new worlds.
 On heav'nly ground they stood, and from the shore
 They view'd the vast immeasurable abyfs, 211
 Outrageous as a sea, dark, wasteful, wild,
 Up from the bottom turn'd by furious winds,
 And surging waves, as mountains, ~~to~~ assault
 Heav'n's height, and with the centre mix the pole. 215
 Silence, ye troubled waves, and thou deep, peace,
 Said then th' omnific Word, your discord end:
 Nor stay'd; but on the wings of Cherubim
 Uplifted, in paternal glory rode
 Far into Chaos, and the world unborn; 220
 For Chaos heard his voice: him all his train
 Follow'd in bright proceffion, to behold
 Creation and the wonders of his might.
 Then stay'd the fervid wheels, and in his hand
 He took the golden compasses, prepar'd 225
 In God's eternal store, to circumscribe
 This universe, and all created things;
 One foot he center'd, and the other turn'd
 Round through the vast profundity obscure,
 And said, Thus far extend, thus far thy bounds, 230
 This be thy just circumference, O world!
 Thus God the Heav'n created, thus the Earth
 Matter unform'd and void; darkness profound

Cover'd th' abyfs; but on the wat'ry calm
 His brooding wings the sp'rit of God outspread, 235
 And vital virtue infus'd, and vital warmth
 Throughout the fluid mafs; but downward purg'd
 The black, tartareous, cold, infernal dregs,
 Adverfe to life: then founded, then conglob'd
 Like things to like, the reft to feveral place 240
 Difparted, and between spun out the air,
 And Earth felf-balanc'd on her centre hung.

Let there be light, faid God; and forthwith light
 Ethereal, firft of things, quinteffence pure,
 Sprung from the deep, and from her native caft 245
 To journey through the airy gloom began,
 Spher'd in a radiant cloud; for yet the fun
 Was not; ſhe in a cloudy tabernacle
 Sojour'n'd the while. God ſaw the light was good;
 And light from darknefs by the hemisphere 250
 Divided: light the day, and darknefs night
 He nam'd. Thus was the firft day ev'n and morn:

Nor paſt uncelebrated, nor unſung
 By the celeftial quires, when orient light
 Exhaling firft from darknefs they beheld; 255
 Birth-day of heav'n and earth; with joy and ſhout,
 The hollow univerfal orb they fill'd,
 And touch'd their golden harps, and hymning prais'd
 God and his works; Creator him they ſung,
 Both when firft ev'ning was, and when firft morn. 260

Again, God ſaid, Let there be firmament
 Amid the waters, and let it divide
 The waters from the waters: - and God made
 The firmament, expanſe of liquid, pure,
 Transparent, elemental air, diffus'd 265
 In circuit to the uttermoſt convex:
 Of this great round: partition firm and ſure,
 The waters underneath from thoſe above
 Dividing; for as earth, ſo he the world
 Built on circumfluus waters calm, in wide 270
 Cryſtalline ocean, and the loud miſrule
 Of Chaos far remov'd, left fierce extremes
 Contiguous might diſtemper the whole frame:

And heav'n he nam'd the firmament: ſo ev'n
 And morning chorus ſung the ſecond day. 275

The earth was form'd, but in the womb as yet
 Of waters, embryo immature involv'd,
 Appear'd not : over all the face of earth
 Main ocean flow'd ; not idle, but with warm
 Prolific humour soft'ning all her globe, 280
 Fermented the great mother to conceive,
 Sate with genial moisture ; when God said,
 Be gather'd now ye waters under Heav'n
 Into one place, and let dry land appear.
 Immediately the mountains huge appear 285
 Emergent, and their broad bare backs upheave
 Into the clouds, their tops ascend the sky :
 So high as heav'd the tumid hills, so low
 Down sunk a hollow bottom, broad and deep,
 Capacious bed of waters ; thither they 290
 Hasted with glad precipitance, uproll'd
 As drops on dust conglobing from the dry ;
 Part rise in crystal wall, or ridge direct,
 For haste ; such flight the great command impress'd
 On the swift floods : as armies at the call 295
 Of trumpet (for of armies thou hast heard)
 Troop to their standard, so the wat'ry throng,
 Wave rolling after wave, where way they found,
 If steep, with torrent rapture, if through plain
 Soft ebbing ; nor withstood them rock or hill, 300
 But they, or under ground, or circuit wide
 With serpent-error wand'ring found their way,
 And on the wafhy ooze deep channels wore ;
 Easy, ere God had bid the ground be dry,
 All but within those banks, where rivers now 305
 Stream and perpetual draw their humid train.
 The dry land, earth, and the great receptacle
 Of congregated waters, he call'd seas ;
 And saw that it was good ; and said, Let th' earth
 Put forth the verdant grass, herb yielding seed, 310
 And fruit-tree yielding fruit after her kind,
 Whose seed is in herself upon the earth.
 He scarce had said, when the bare earth, till then
 Desert and bare, unsightly, unadorn'd,
 Brought forth the tender grass, whose verdure clad 315
 Her universal face with pleasant green ;
 Then herbs of ev'ry leaf, that sudden flow'r'd

Op'ning their various colours, and made gay
 Her bosom swelling sweet : and these scarce blown,
 Forth flourish'd thick th' clust'ring vine, forth crept 320
 The smelling gourd, up stood the corny reed
 Embattled in her field, and th' humble shrub,
 And bush with frizzled hair implicit : last
 Rose as in dance the stately trees, and spread 324
 Their branches hung with copious fruit, or gemm'd,
 The blossoms : with high woods the hills were crown'd,
 With tufts the valleys, and each fountain side,
 With borders 'long the rivers : that earth now
 Seem'd like to heav'n, a seat where gods might dwell,
 Or wander with delight, and love to haunt 330
 Her sacred shades ; though God had yet not rain'd
 Upon the earth, and man to till the ground
 None was ; but from the earth a dewy mist
 Went up and water'd all the ground and each
 Plant of the field, which, ere it was on th' earth, 335
 God made, and ev'ry herb, before it grew
 On the green stem ; God saw that it was good :
 So ev'n and morn recorded the third day.
 Again th' Almighty spake, Let there be lights
 High in th' expanse of Heav'n, to divide 340
 The day from night ; and let them be for signs,
 For seasons, and for days, and circling years ;
 And let them be for lights as I ordain
 Their office in the firmament of Heav'n,
 To give light on the Earth ; and it was so. 345
 And God made two great lights, great for their use
 To man, the greater to have rule by day,
 The less by night altern ; and made the stars,
 And set them in the firmament of Heav'n,
 T' illuminate the Earth ; and rule the day 350
 In their vicissitude, and rule the night,
 And light from darkness to divide. God saw,
 Surveying his great work, that it was good :
 For of celestial bodies first the sun
 A mighty sphere he fram'd, unlightsome first, 355
 Though of ethereal mould : then form'd the moon
 Globose, and ev'ry magnitude of stars,
 And sow'd with stars 'he Heav'n thick as a field :
 Of light by far the greater part he took,

Transplanted from her cloudy shrine, and plac'd 360
 In the sun's orb, made porous to receive
 And drink the liquid light, firm to retain
 Her gather'd beams, great palace now of light.
 Hither, as to their fountain, other stars
 Repairing, in their golden urns draw light, 365
 And hence the morning planet gilds her horn ;
 By tincture or reflexion they augment
 Their small peculiar, though from human sight
 So far remote, with diminution seen.
 First in the east his glorious lamp was seen, 370
 Regent of day, and all th' horizon round
 Invested with bright rays, jocund to run
 His longitude through Heav'n's high road ; the grey
 Dawn, and the Pleiades before him danc'd,
 Shedding sweet influence ; less bright the moon, 375
 But opposite in levell'd west was set
 His mirror, with full face borrowing her light
 From him ; for other light she needed none
 In that aspect ; and still that distance keeps
 Till night, then in the east her turn she shines, 380
 Revolv'd on Heav'n's great axle, and her reign
 With thousand lesser lights dividual holds,
 With thousand thousand stars, that then appear'd
 Spangling the hemisphere : then first adorn'd
 With their bright luminaries, that set and rose, 385
 Glad ev'ning and glad morn crown'd the fourth day.
 And God said, Let the waters generate
 Reptile with spawn abundant, living soul ;
 And let fowl fly above the earth, with wings
 Display'd on th' open firmament of heav'n. 390
 And God created the great whales, and each
 Soul living, each crept, which plenteoufly
 The waters generated by their kinds,
 And ev'ry bird of wing after his kind, 394
 And saw that it was good, and blest'd them, saying,
 Be fruitful, multiply, and in the seas,
 And lakes, and running streams, the waters fill ;
 And let the fowl be multiply'd on th' earth.
 Forthwith the sounds and seas, each creek and bay,
 With fry innumerable swarm, and sholes 400
 Of fish, that with their fins and shining scales

nder the green wave, in sculls that oft
 he mid sea : part single or with mate
 the sea weed their pasture, and through groves
 d stray ; or sporting with quick glance, 405
 o the sun their wav'd coats dropt with gold ;
 heir pearly shells at ease, attend
 nutriment ; or under rocks their food
 ted armour watch ; on smooth the seal,
 ended dolphins play : part huge of bulk 410
 wing unwieldy', enormous in their gait,
 ft the ocean : there leviathan,
 : of living creatures, on the deep
 id like a promontory, sleeps or swims,
 eems a moving land, and at his gills 415
 in, and at his trunk spouts out a sea.
 while the tepid caves, and fens, and shores,
 brood as num'rous hatch, from th' egg that soon
 ig with kindly rupture forth disclos'd
 callow young, but feather'd soon and fledg'd 420
 summ'd their pens, and soaring th' air sublime,
 clang despis'd the ground, under a cloud
 spect ; there the eagle and the stork
 ffs and cedar tops their eyries build :
 osely wing the region, part more wise 425
 nmon, rang'd in figure wedge their way,
 gent of seasons, and set forth
 airy caravan high over seas
 ; and over lands with mutual wing
 ; their flight ; so steers the prudent crane 430
 nnu'al voyage, borne on winds ; the air
 , as they pass, fann'd with unnumber'd plumes ;
 branch to branch the smaller birds with song
 d the woods, and spread their painted wings
 r'n ; nor then the solemn nightingale 435
 l warbling, but all night tun'd her soft lays :
 s on silver lakes and rivers bath'd
 downy breast ; the swan, with arched neck
 en her white wings mantling proudly, rows
 ate with oary feet ; yet oft they quit 440
 ank, and rising on stiff pennons, tow'r
 mid aerial sky : others on ground

Walk'd firm ; the crested cock, whose clarion sounds
 The silent hours ; and th' other, whose gay train
 Adorns him, colour'd with the florid hue 445
 Of rainbows and starry' eyes The waters thus
 With fish replenish'd, and the air with fowl,
 Ev'ning and morn solemniz'd the fifth day.

The sixth, and of creation last, arose
 With ev'ning harps and matin ; when God said, 450
 Let th' earth bring forth soul living in her kind,
 Cattle, and creeping things, and beast of th' earth,
 Each in their kind The earth obey'd, and straight
 Op'ning her fertile womb, teem'd at a birth
 Innumerable living creatures, perfect forms, 455
 Limb'd and full grown ; out of the ground up rose,
 As from his lair, the wild beast where he wons
 In forest wild, in thicket, brake, or den ;
 Among the trees in pairs they rose, they walk'd ;
 The cattle in the fields and meadows green : 460
 Those rare and solitary, these in flocks
 Pasturing at once, and in broad herds unsprung.
 The grassy clods now calv'd, now half appear'd
 The tawny lion, pawing to get free
 His hinder parts, then springs as broke from bonds, 465
 And rampant shakes his brindled mane ; the ounce,
 The libbard, and the tyger, as the mole
 Rising, the crumbl'd earth above them threw
 In hillocks ; the swift stag from under ground
 Bore up his branching head : scarce from his mould 470
 Behemoth, biggest born of earth, upheav'd
 His vastness : fleec'd the flocks and bleating rose,
 As plants : ambiguous between sea and land
 The river-horse and scaly crocodile.
 At once came forth whatever creeps the ground, 475
 Insect or worm : those wav'd their limber fans
 For wings and smallest lineaments exact
 In all the liveries deck'd of summer's pride,
 With spots of gold and purple', azure and green :
 These as a line their long dimension drew, 480
 Striking the ground with sinuous trace ; not all
 Minims of nature ; some of serpent kind,
 Wondrous in length and corpulence, involv'd

II. PARADISE LOST. 169

iaky folds, and added wings. First crept
 rimonious emmet, provident 485
 re, in small room large heart inclos'd,
 of just equality perhaps
 er join'd in her popular tribes
 monal'ty : swarming next appear'd
 nale bee, that feeds her husband drone 490
 ily, and builds her waxen cells
 oney stor'd : the rest are numberless,
 on their natures know't, and gav't them names
 s to thee repeated ; nor unknown
 pent, subtlest beast of all the field, 495
 : extent sometimes, with brazen eyes
 ury mane terrific, though to thee
 ious, but obedient at thy call.
 heav'n in all her glory shone, and roll'd
 tions, as the great first Mover's hand 500
 eel'd their course ; earth in her rich attire
 mate lovely smil'd ; air, water, earth,
 , fish, beast, was flown, was swam, was walk'd
 it ; and of the sixth day yet remain'd,
 vant'd yet the master-work, the end 505
 et done ; a creature, who not prone
 ite as other creatures, but endu'd
 nctity of reason, might erect
 ure and upright with front serene
 the rest, self-knowing, and from thence 510
 imous to correspond with heav'n,
 teful to acknowledge whence his good
 's, thither with heart, and voice, and eyes
 l in devotion, to adore
 rship God supreme, who made him chief 515
 is works : therefore th' Omnipotent
 Father (for where is not he
 ') thus to his Son audibly spake.
 s make now man in our image, man
 imilitude, and let them rule 520
 : fish and fowl of sea and air,
 the field, and over all the earth,
 ry creeping thing that creeps the ground.
 I, he form'd thee, Adam, thee, O Man,

Dust of the ground, and in thy nostrils breath'd
 The breath of life; in his own image he
 Created thee, in the image of God
 Express, and thou becam'st a living soul.
 Male he created thee, but thy comfort
 Female for race; then bless'd mankind, and said,
 Be fruitful, multiply, and fill the earth,
 Subdue it, and throughout dominion hold
 Over fish of the sea, and fowl of the air,
 And ev'ry living thing that moves on th' earth.
 Wherever thus created, for no place
 Is yet distinct by name. thence, as thou know'st,
 He brought thee into this delicious grove,
 This garden, planted with the trees of God,
 Delectable both to behold and taste:
 And freely all their pleasant fruit for food
 Gave thee; all sorts are here that all th' earth yiel
 Variety without end; but of the tree,
 Which tasted works knowledge of good and evil,
 Thou may'st not: in the day thou eat'st, thou dy
 Death is the penalty impos'd; beware,
 And govern well thy appetite, lest Sin
 Surprise thee, and her black attendant Death.
 Here finish'd he, and all that he had made
 View'd, and behold all was entirely good;
 So ev'n and morn accomplish'd the sixth day;
 Yet not till the Creator from his work
 Desisting, though unwearied, up return'd,
 Up to the Heav'n of Heav'ns, his high abode,
 Thence to behold this new created world,
 Th' addition of his empire, how it show'd
 In prospect from his throne, how good, how fair,
 Answering his great idea. Up he rode,
 Follow'd with acclamation, and the sound
 Symphonious of ten thousand harps that tun'd
 Angelic harmonies: the earth, the air
 Resounded, (thou remember'st, for thou heard'st)
 The heav'ns and all the constellations rung,
 The planets in their station list'ning stood,
 While the bright pomp ascended jubilant.
 Open, ye everlasting gates, they sung,

ye heav'ns, your living doors ; let in
 great Creator from his work return'd
 ificent, his six days work, a world ;
 and henceforth oft ; for God will deign
 it oft the dwellings of just men, 570
 ited, and with frequent intercourse
 :r will send his winged messengers
 ands of supernal grace. So sung
 lorious train ascending. He through heav'n,
 open'd wide her blazing portals, led 575
 ob's eternal house direct the way ;
 ad and ample road, whose dust is gold
 avement stars, as stars to thee appear,
 n the galaxy, that milky way ;
 i nightly, as a circling zone, thou seest 580
 er'd with stars. And now on earth the sev'nth
 ng arose in Eden ; for the sun
 et, and twilight from the east came on,
 anning nigh : when at the holy mount
 av'n's high-seated, top, th' imperial throne 585
 idhead, fix'd for ever firm and sure.
 ilial Pow'r arriv'd, and sat him down
 his great Father ; for he also went
 le, yet stay'd (such privilege
 Omnipresence), and the work ordain'd, 590
 or and end of all things ; and from work
 esting, blest'd and hallow'd the sev'nth day,
 iting on that day from all his work :
 ot in silence holy kept ; the harp
 work, and rested not ; the solemn pipe 595
 ulcimer, all organs of sweet stop,
 inds on fret by string or golden wire
 er'd soft tunings, intermix'd with voice
 l or unison ; of incense clouds,
 ig from golden censers, hid the mount. 600
 on and the six days acts they sung,
 are thy works, Jehovah, infinite
 ow'r ; what thought can measure thee, or tongue
 : thee ? greater now in thy return
 from the giant-angels : thee that day 605
 hunders magnify'd ; but to create

Is greater than created to destroy.
 Who can impair thee, mighty King, or bound
 Thy empire? Easily the proud attempt
 Of sp'rits apostate, and their counsels vain, 610
 Thou hast repell'd, while impiously they thought
 'Thee to diminish, and from thee withdraw
 The number of thy worshippers. Who seeks
 To lessen thee, against his purpose serves
 To manifest the more thy might: his evil 615
 Thou usest, and from thence creat'st more good.
 Witness this new-made world, another heav'n,
 From heav'n-gate not far, founded in view
 On the clear hyaline, the glassy sea;
 Of amplitude almost immense, with stars 620
 Num'rous, and ev'ry star perhaps a world
 Of destin'd habitation; but thou know'st
 Their seasons: among these the seat of men,
 Earth, with her nether ocean circumfus'd,
 Their present dwelling-place. Thrice happy men, 625
 And sons of men, whom God hath thus advanc'd,
 Created in his image, there to dwell,
 And worship him; and in reward to rule
 Over his works, on earth, in sea, or air;
 And multiply a race of worshippers, 630
 Holy and just: thrice happy, if they know
 Their happiness, and persevere upright.
 So sung they, and the empyrean rung,
 With Halleluiahs: Thus was sabbath kept.
 And thy request think now fulfill'd, that ask'd 635
 How first this world and face of things began,
 And what before thy memory was done
 From the beginning, that posterity,
 Inform'd by thee, might know; if else thou seek'st
 Ought, not surpassing human measure, say. 640

END OF THE SEVENTH BOOK.

RADISE LOST.

B O O K VIII.

THE ARGUMENT.

*enquires concerning celestial motions; is doubtfully
perplexed, and exhorted to search rather things more wor-
thy knowledge: Adam assents; and still desirous to
know, Raphael, relates to him what he remembered since
his own creation, his placing in Paradise, his talk with
the Angel concerning solitude and fit society, his first meeting
with Eve; his discourse with the Angel
upon, who, after admonitions repeated, departs.*

THE Angel ended, and in Adam's ear
So charming left his voice, that he a while
Saw him still speaking, still stood fix'd to hear:
As new wak'd, thus gratefully reply'd.
What thanks sufficient, or what recompense
5 I have I to render thee, divine
Arch-angel, who thus largely hast allay'd
The thirst I had of knowledge, and vouchsaf'd
A friendly conversation to relate
To me by thee unsearchable, now heard
10 Wonder, but delight, and, as is due,
Glory attributed to the high
God? Something yet of doubt remains,
Which only thy solution can resolve.
When I behold this goodly frame, this world,
15 Heaven and earth consisting, and compute
The various magnitudes, this earth a spot, a grain,
A point, with the firmament compar'd,
And all her number'd stars, that seem to roll
In distance incomprehensible, (for such
20 distance argues, and their swift return
Is but a mere) merely to officiate light
And this opacous earth, this punctual spot,
Day and night, in all their vast survey
Is besides; reas'ning I oft admire,
25 How nature wise and frugal could commit

Such disproportions, with superfluous hand
 So many noble bodies to create,
 Greater so manifold, to this one use,
 For ought appears, and on their orbs impose 30
 Such restless revolution day by day
 Repeated, while the sedentary earth,
 That better might with far less compass move,
 Serv'd by more noble than herself, attains
 Her end without least motion, and receives, 35
 As tribute, such a sumless journey brought
 Of incorporeal speed, her warmth and light;
 Speed, to describe whose swiftness number fails.

So spake our sire, and by his count'nance seem'd
 Ent'ring on studious thoughts abstruse; which Eve 40
 Perceiving, where the sat retir'd in sight,
 With lowliness majestic from her seat,
 And grace that won who saw to wish her stay,
 Rose, and went forth among her fruits and flow'rs,
 To visit how they prosper'd, bud and bloom, 45
 Her nursery; they at her coming sprung,
 And touch'd by her fair tendance gladder grew.
 Yet went she not, as not with such discourse
 Delighted, or not capable her ear
 Of what was high: such pleasure she reserv'd; 50
 Adam relating, the sole auditress;
 Her husband the relator she preferr'd
 Before the Angel, and of him to ask
 Chose rather; he, she knew, would intermix
 Grateful digressions, and solve high dispute 55
 With conjugal caresses; from his lip
 Not words alone pleas'd her. O when meet now
 Such pairs, in love and mutual honour join'd?
 With goddess-like demeanour forth she went;
 Not unattended; for on her, as a queen, 60
 A pomp of winning graces waited still,
 And from about her shot darts of desire
 Into all eyes, to wish her still in sight.
 And Raphael now to Adam's doubt propos'd
 Benevolent and facile thus reply'd 65

To ask or search I blame thee not; for Heav'n
 Is as the book of God before thee set,
 Wherein to read his wondrous works, and learn

I. PARADISE LOST. 173

s, hours, or days, or months, or years.
 ain, whether Heav'n move, or Earth, 70
 ot, if thou reckon right; the rest
 or Angel the great Architect
 to conceal, and not divulge
 to be scann'd by them who ought
 mire; or if they list to try 75
 , He his fabric of the heav'ns
 te their disputes, perhaps to move
 er at their quaint opinions wide
 when they come to model Heav'n,
 late the stars, how they will yield 80
 y frame, how build, unbuild, contrive
 pearances, how gird the sphere
 ric and eccentric scribled o'er
 epycicle, orb in orb.
 y thy reas'ning this I guess, 85
 o lead thy offspring, and supposest
 es bright and greater should not serve
 ot bright, nor heav'n such journeys run,
 ng still, when she alone receives
 it. Consider first, that great 90
 infers not excellence: the earth
 a comparison of heav'n, so small,
 ing, may of solid good contain
 ty than the sun that barren shines,
 tue on itself works no effect, 95
 : fruitful earth; there first receiv'd
 s inactive else, their vigour find.
 earth are those bright luminaries
 but to thee, earth's habitant.
 he Heav'ns wide circuit let it speak 100
 er's high magnificence, who built
 is, and his line stretch'd out so far;
 may know he dwells not in his own;
 : too large for him to fill,
 : a small partition, and the rest 105
 for uses to his LORD best known.
 nefs of those circles attribute,
 umberless, to his omnipotence,
 orporeal substances could add
 ist spiritual: me thou think'st not slow; 110

Who since the morning-hour set out from Heav'n,
 Where God resides, and ere mid-day arriv'd
 In Eden; distance inexpressible
 By numbers that have name. But this I urge,
 Admitting motion in the heav'ns, to show 115
 Invalid that which thee to doubt it mov'd;
 Not that I so affirm, though so it seem
 'To thee who hast thy dwelling here on earth.
 God to remove his ways from human sense, 119
 Plac'd Heav'n from earth so far, that earthly sight,
 If it presume, might err in things too high,
 And no advantage gain. What if the sun
 Be center to the world, and other stars
 By his attractive virtue and their own
 Incited, dance about him various rounds; 125
 Their wand'ring course now high, now low, then hid,
 Progressive, retrograde, or standing still,
 In fix thou seest? and what if sev'nth to these
 The planet earth, so steadfast though she seem,
 Insensibly three different motions move? 130
 Which else to sev'ral spheres thou must ascribe,
 Mov'd contrary with thwart obliquities:
 Or save the sun his labour, and that swift
 Nocturnal and diurnal rhomb suppos'd,
 Invisible else above all stars, the wheel 135
 Of day and night; which needs not thy belief,
 If earth industrious of herself fetch day
 Travelling east, and with her part averse
 From the sun's beams meet night, her other part
 Still luminous by his ray. What if that light 140
 Sent from her through the wide transpicious air,
 To the terrestrial morn be as a star
 Enlight'ning her by day, as she by night
 'This earth? reciprocal, if land be there,
 Fields and inhabitants: her spots thou seest 145
 As clouds, and clouds may rain, and rain produce
 Fruits in her soften'd soil, for some to eat
 Alloted there; and other suns perhaps,
 With their attendant moons, thou wilt descry
 Communicating male and female light; 150
 Which two great sexes animate the world,
 Stor'd in each orb perhaps with some that live.

VIII. PARADISE LOST. 177

ach vast room in nature unpossess'd
 ing soul, desert and desolate,
 to shine, yet scarce to contribute 155
 orb a glimpse of light, convey'd so far
 to this habitable, which returns
 back to them, is obvious to dispute.
 whether thus these things, or whether not ;
 her the sun predominant in heav'n 160
 in the earth, or earth rise on the sun ;
 om the east his flaming road begin,
 e from west her silent course advance
 inoffensive peace, that spinning sleeps
 er soft axle, while she pacés ev'n, 165
 bears thee soft with the smooth air along ;
 t not thy thoughts with matters hid ;
 e them to God above, him serve and fear ;
 her creatures, as him pleases best,
 ever plac'd, let him dispose : joy thou 170
 at he gives to thee, this Paradise,
 thy fair Eve ; Heav'n is for thee too high
 now what passes there ; be lowly wife :
 c only what concerns thee and thy being ;
 m not of other worlds, what creatures there 175
 in what state, condition, or degree,
 nted that thus far hath been reveal'd,
 f earth only, but of highest Heav'n.
 whom thus Adam, clear'd of doubt, reply'd.
 fully hast thou satisfy'd me, pure 180
 igence of heav'n, Angel serene.
 freed from intricacies, taught to live,
 asiest way, nor with perplexing thoughts
 interrupt the sweet of life, from which
 hath bid dwell far off all anxious cares, 185
 not molest us, unless we ourselves
 them with wand'ring thoughts, and notions vain.
 apt the mind or fancy is to rove
 reck'd, and of her roving is no end ;
 warn'd, or by experience taught, she learn, 190
 not to know at large of things remote
 use, obscure and subtle, but to know
 which before us lies in daily life,
 prime wisdom : what is more, is sume,

In goodness and in pow'r pre- eminent ;
 Tell me, how may I know him, how adore, 280
 From whom I have that thus I move and live,
 And feel that I am happier than I know.
 While thus I call'd, and stray'd, I knew not whither.
 From where I first drew air, and first beheld
 This happy light ; when answer none return'd, 285
 On a green shady brink, profuse of flowers,
 Pensive I sat me down : there gentle sleep
 First found me, and with soft oppression seiz'd
 My drouz'd sense, untroubled, though I thought
 I then was passing to my former state 290
 Insensible, and forthwith to dissolve :
 When suddenly stood at my head a dream,
 Whose inward apparition gently mov'd
 My fancy to believe I yet had being,
 And liv'd. One came, methought, of shape divine, 295
 And said, Thy mansion wants thee, Adam, rise,
 First man, of men innumerable ordain'd
 First Father, call'd by thee, I come thy guide
 To the garden of bliss, thy seat prepar'd.
 So saying, by the hand he took me rais'd, 300
 And over fields and waters, as in air
 Smooth sliding without step, last led me up
 A woody mountain ; whose high top was plain,
 A circuit wide, inclos'd, with goodliest trees
 Planted, with walks, and bow'rs, that what I saw 305
 Of earth before scarce pleasant seem'd. Each tree
 I loaden with fairest fruit, that hung to th' eye
 Tempting, stir'd in me sudden appetite
 To pluck and eat ; whereat I wak'd, and found
 Before mine eyes all real, as in the dream 310
 Had lively shadow'd. Here had new begun
 My wand'ring, had not he who was my guide
 Up hither, from among the trees appear'd,
 Presence divine. Rejoicing but with awe,
 In adoration at his feet I fell 315
 Submits : he rear'd me, and whom thou sought'st I am,
 Said, mildly, Author of all this thou seest
 Above, or round about thee, or beneath.
 This Paradise I give thee, count it thine
 To till and keep, and of the fruit to eat : 320

y tree that in the garden grows
 ely with glad heart: fear here no dearth:
 the tree whose operation brings
 ridge of good and ill, which I have set
 ridge of thy obedience and thy faith, 325
 he garden by the tree of life,
 ber what I warn thee, thun to taste,
 un the bitter consequence; for know,
 y thou eat'st thereof, my sole command
 rest'd, inevitably thou shalt die, 330
 hat day mortal: and this happy state
 lose, expell'd from hence into a world
 and sorrow. Sternly he pronounc'd
 id interdiction, which resounds
 adful in mine ear, though in my choice 335
 incur; but soon his clear aspect
 'd, and gracious purpose thus renew'd.
 y these fair bounds, but all the earth
 : and to thy race I give: as lords
 it, and all things that therein live, 340
 in sea, or air, beast, fish and fowl.
 whereof each bird and beast behold
 heir kinds; I bring them to receive
 hee their names, and pay thee fealty
 ow subjection; understand the same 345
 within their wat'ry residence,
 her summon'd, since they cannot change
 lement, to draw the thinner air.
 s he spake, each bird and beast behold
 icking two and two, these caw'ring low 350
 landishment, each bird stoop'd on his wing.
 d them, as they pass'd, and understood
 ature, with such knowledge God endu'd
 den apprehension But in these
 not what methought I wanted still; 355
 the heav'nly vision thus presum'd.
 what name, for thou above all these,
 mankind, or ought than mankind higher,
 est far by naming, how may I
 thee, Author of this universe, 360
 l this good to man? for whose well-being
 ly, and with hands so liberal,

Thou hast provided all things: but with me
 I see not who partakes. In solitude
 What happiness, who can enjoy alone,
 Or all enjoying, what contentment find? 365
 Thus I presumptuous; and the vision bright,
 As with a smile more brighten'd, thus reply'd:

What call'st thou solitude? is not the earth
 With various living creatures, and the air, 370
 Replenish'd, and all these at thy command
 To come and play before thee? Know'st thou not
 Their language and their ways? they also know,
 And reason not contemptibly; with these
 Find pastime, and bear rule; thy realm is large. 375
 So spake the universal Lord, and seem'd
 So ord'ring. I, with leave of speech implor'd,
 And humble deprecation, thus reply'd.

Let not my words offend thee, heav'nly Pow'r,
 My Maker, be propitious while I speak. 380
 Hast thou not made me here thy substitute,
 And these inferior far beneath me set?
 Among unequals what society
 Can sort, what harmony or true delight?
 Which must be mutual, in proportion due 385
 Giv'n and receiv'd; but in disparity
 The one intense, the other still remiss,
 Cannot well suit with either, but soon prove
 Tedious alike. Offellowship I speak
 Such as I seek, fit to participate 390
 All rational delight, wherein the brute
 Cannot be human consort: they rejoice
 Each with their kind; lion with lionsess;
 So fitly them in pairs thou hast combin'd;
 Much less can bird with beast, or fish with fowl 395
 So well converse, nor with the ox the ape;
 Worse then can man with beast, and least of all.

Whereto th' Almighty answer'd, not displeas'd.
 A nice and subtle happiness I see
 Thou to thyself propos'st, in the choice 400
 Of thy associates, Adam, and wilt taste
 No pleasure, though in pleasure, solitary.
 What think'st thou then of me, and this my state?
 Seem I to thee sufficiently possess'd

VIII. PARADISE LOST. 183

pincfs, or not? who am alone 408
 all eternity; for none I know
 I to me, or like: equal much left.
 have I then with whom to hold converse,
 with the creatures which I made, and those
 inferior, infinite descent 410
 what other creatures are to thee?
 ceas'd; I lowly answer'd. To attain
 height and depth of thy eternal ways
 man thoughts come short, Supreme of things:
 in thyself art perfect, and in thee 415
 deficiency found: not so is man,
 degree, the cause of his desire
 conversation with his like to help,
 to cease his defects, No need that thou
 shouldst propagate, already infinite, 420
 through all numbers absolute, though one;
 and by number is to manifest
 single imperfection, and beget
 of his like, his image multiply'd,
 thereby defective, which requires 425
 equal love, and dearest amity.
 in thy secrecy although alone,
 with thyself accompanied, seek'st not
 communication; yet so pleas'd,
 raise thy creatures to what height thou wilt 430
 on or communion, deify'd:
 no converse can these erect
 prone, nor in their ways complacence find.
 as I embolden'd spake, and freedom us'd
 give, and acceptance found; which gain'd 435
 answer from the gracious voice divine.
 is far to try thee, Adam, I was pleas'd;
 and thee knowing, not of beasts alone,
 thou hast rightly nam'd, but of thyself,
 bring well the spirit within thee free, 440
 to me, not imparted to the brute;
 fellowship therefore unmeet for thee,
 reason was thou freely should'st dislike;
 be so minded still: I, ere thou spak'st,
 thought it not good for man to be alone: 445
 of such company as then thou saw'st

Intended thee, for trial only brought,
 To see how thou could'st judge of fit and meet :
 What next I bring shall please thee, be assur'd,
 Thy likeness, thy fit help, thy other self, 450
 Thy wish exactly to thy heart's desire.

He ended, or I heard no more ; for now
 My earthly by his heav'nly overpower'd,
 Which it had long flood under, strain'd to the height
 In that celestial colloquy sublime, 455

As with an object that excels the sense
 Dazzled and spent, sunk down, and sought repair
 Of sleep, which instantly fell on me, call'd
 By nature as in aid ; and clos'd mine eyes.
 Mine eyes he clos'd, but open left the cell 460

Of fancy, my internal sight, by which
 Abstract as in a trance methought I saw,
 Though sleeping, where I lay, and saw the shape
 Still glorious before whom awake I stood ;
 Who slooping open'd my left side, and took 465

From thence a rib, with cordial spirits warm
 And life-blood streaming fresh ; wide was the wound,
 But suddenly with flesh fill'd up, and heal'd :

The rib he form'd and fashion'd with his hands ;
 Under his forming hands a creature grew, 470

Manlike, but different sex, so lovely fair,
 That what seem'd fair in all the world, seem'd now
 Mean or in her summ'd up, in her contain'd.

And in her looks, which from that time infus'd
 Sweetness into my heart, unfelt before, 475

And into all things from her air inspir'd
 The sp'rit of love and amorous delight.
 She disappear'd, and left me dark ; I wak'd
 To find her, or for ever to deplore

Her loss, and other pleasures all abjure : 480

When out of hope, behold her, not far off,
 Such as I saw her in my dream, adorn'd
 With what all earth or heav'n could bestow

To make her amiable : on she came,
 Led by her heav'nly Maker, though unseen, 485

And guided by his voice, nor uninform'd
 Of nuptial sanctity and marriage rites :
 Grace was in all her steps, heav'n in her eye,

III. PARADISE LOST. 185

gesture dignity and love.
 y'd could not forbear aloud. 490
 turn hath made amends; thou hast fulfill'd
 rds, Creator, bounteous and benign,
 f all things fair, but fairest this
 y gifts, nor enviest. I now see
 my bone, flesh of my flesh, myself 495
 ne: woman is her name, of man
 d; for this cause he shall forego
 nd mother, and t' his wife adhere;
 y shall be one flesh, one heart, one soul.
 eard me thus; and though divinely brought,
 xcence, and virgin modesty, 501
 ue and the conscience of her worth,
 uld be woo'd, and not unfought be won,
 ious, not obtrusive, but retir'd,
 re desirable, or to say all, 505
 erself, though pure of sinful thought,
 it in her so, that seeing me, she turn'd;
 'd her: she what was honour knew,
 h obsequious majesty approv'd
 ded reason. To the nuptial bow'r 510
 : blushing like the morn: all heav'n,
 py constellations, on that hour
 ir selectest influence; the earth
 n of gratulation, and each hill;
 he birds; fresh gales and gentle airs 515
 'd it to the woods, and from their wings
 ose, flung odours from the spicy shrub,
 ng, till the am'rous bird of night
 ousal, and bid haste the ev'ning star
 ill-top, to light the bridal lamp. 520
 have I told thee all my state, and brought
 y to the sum of earthly bliss
 : enjoy; and must confess to find
 ings else delight indeed, but such
 or not, works in the mind no change, 525
 ement desire; these delicacies
 of taste, sight, smell, herbs, fruits, and flow'rs,
 and the melody of birds: but here
 rwife, transported I behold,
 rted touch; here passion first I felt; 530

Commotion strange, in all enjoyments else
 Superior and unmov'd, here only weak
 Against the charm of beauty's pow'rful glance.
 Or nature fail'd in me, and left some part
 Not proof enough such object to sustain;
 Or from my side subducting, took perhaps
 More than enough; at least on her bestow'd
 Too much of ornament, in outward show
 Elaborate, of inward less exact.
 For well I understand in the prime end
 Of nature her th' inferior; in the mind
 And inward faculties, which most excel:
 In outward also her resembling less
 His image who made both, and less expressing
 The character of that dominion giv'n
 O'er other creatures: yet when I approach
 Her loveliness; so absolute she seems,
 And in herself complete, so well to know
 Her own, that what she wills to do or say
 Seems wisest, virtuousest, discreetest, best;
 All higher knowledge in her presence falls
 Degraded, wisdom in discourse with her
 Loses discount'nanc'd, and like folly shows;
 Authority and reason on her wait,
 As one intended first, not after made
 Occasionally; and to consummate all,
 Greatness of mind, and nobleness their seat
 Build in her loveliest, and create an awe
 About her, as a guard angelic plac'd
 To whom the Angel, with contracted brow.
 Accuse not nature, she hath done her part;
 Do thou but thine; and be not diffident
 Of wisdom; she deserts thee not, if thou
 Dismiss not her, when most thou need'st her might
 By attributing overmuch to things
 Less excellent, as thou thyself perceiv'st.
 For what admir'st thou, what transports thee so!
 An outside; fair no doubt, and worthy well
 Thy cherishing, thy honouring, and thy love,
 Not thy subjection. Weigh with her thyself;
 Then value; oft times nothing profits more
 Than self-esteem, grounded on just and right

VIII. PARADISE LOST. 187

nanag'd ; of that skill the more thou know'st,
 ore she will acknowledge thee her head,
 realities yield all her shows: 575
 to adorn for thy delight the more,
 ful, that with honour thou may'st love
 iate, who sees when thou art seen least wise.
 the sense of touch whereby mankind
 ragated seem such dear delight 580
 d all other, think the same vouchsaf'd
 tle and each beast ; which would not be
 m made common, and divulg'd, if ought
 n enjoy'd were worthy to subdue
 ul of man, or passion in him move. 585
 high'er in her society thou find'st
 live, human, rational, love still ;
 ng thou dost well, in passion not,
 in true love consists not ; love refines
 oughs, and heart enlarges ; hath his seat 590
 'n, and is judicious ; is the scale
 ich to heav'nly love thou may'st ascend ;
 k in carnal pleasure ; for which cause
 g the beasts no mate for thee was found.
 whom thus half-abash'd, Adam reply'd. 595
 r her outside form'd so fair, nor ought
 :reation common to all kinds
 gh higher of the geniat bed by far,
 ith mysterious reverence I deem),
 h delights me, as those graceful acts, 600
 housand decencies that daily flow
 ill words and actions mild with love
 rect compliance, which declare unfeign'd
 of mind, or in us both one soul ;
 ny to behold in wedded pair 605
 rateful than harmonious sound to th' ear,
 fe subject not : I to thee disclose
 nward thence I feel ; not therefore soil'd,
 meet with various objects, from the sense
 sly representing ; yet still free 610
 re the best, and follow what I approve.
 : thou blam'st me not ; for love thou say'st
 up to heav'n, is both the way and guide :
 ith me then, if lawful what I ask :

Love not the heav'nly sp'rits, and how their love 615
 Express they? by looks only, or do they mix
 Irradiance, virtual or immediate touch?

To whom the angel, with a smile that glow'd
 Celestial rosy red, love's proper hue,
 Answer'd. Let it suffice thee that thou know'st 620
 Us happy, and without love no happiness.

Whatever pure thou in the body' enjoy'st,
 (And pure thou wert created), we enjoy
 In eminence, and obstacle find none
 Of membrane, joint, or limb, exclusive bars; 625

Easier than air with air, if sp'rits embrace,
 Total they mix, union of pure with pure
 Delirring; nor restrain'd conveyance need,
 As flesh to mix with flesh, or soul with soul.
 But I can now no more; the parting sun 630

Beyond the earth's green cape and verdant isles
 Hesperian sets, my signal to depart:
 Be strong, live happy, and love; but first of all
 Him whom to love is to obey, and keep
 His great command; take heed lest passion sway 635
 Thy judgement to do ought, which else free will
 Would not admit: thine of all thy sons,
 The weal or woe in thee is plac'd; beware.

I in thy persevering shall rejoice,
 And all the bless'd: stand fast; to stand or fall 640
 Free in their own arbitrament it lies.

Perfect within, no outward aid require:
 And all temptation to transgress repel.

So saying, he arose; whom Adam thus
 Follow'd with benediction. Since to part, 645
 Go heav'nly guest, ethereal messenger,
 Sent from whose sov'reign goodness I adore.
 Gentle to me, and affable, hath been
 Thy condescension, and shall be honour'd ever
 With grateful memory; thou to mankind 650
 Be good and friendly still, and oft return.

So parted they; the Angel up to Heav'n
 From the thick shade, and Adam to his bow'r.

PARADISE LOST.

BOOK IX.

THE ARGUMENT.

Having compassed the earth, with meditated guile, turns as a mist by night into Paradise, and enters in the serpent sleeping. Adam and Eve in the morning forth to their labours; which Eve proposes to divide several places, each labouring apart: Adam consents, alledging the danger, lest the enemy, of whom they are forewarned, should attempt her found alone: Eve, with to be thought not circumspect or firm enough, urges going apart, the rather desirous to make trial of her strength; Adam at last yields. The serpent finds her gone; his subtle approach, first gazing, then speaking, with much flattery extolling Eve above all other creatures. Eve, wondering to hear the serpent speak, asks how he attained to human speech and such understanding till now; the serpent answers, that by tasting of a certain tree in the garden, he attained both to speech and reason, till then void of both: Eve requires him to bring her to that tree, and finds it to be the tree of knowledge forbidden: The serpent now grown bolder, with many wiles and arguments induces her at length to eat; she, raised with the taste, deliberates awhile whether to impart thereof to Adam or not; at last brings him of the fruit, relates what persuaded her to eat thereof. Adam first amazed, but perceiving her lost, resolves through violence of love to perish with her; and extenuating the trespass, eats also of the fruit: The effects thereof affect them both; they seek to cover their nakedness; then fall to variance, and accusation of one another.

[O more of talk, where God or Angel guest
With Man, as with his friend, familiar us'd
it indulgent, and with him partake
all repast, permitting him the while
his usual discourse unblam'd: I now must change 5

These notes to tragic; foul distrust, and breach
 Disloyal; on the part of man, revolt,
 And disobedience; on the part of Heav'n
 Now alienated, distance and distaste,
 Anger and just rebuke, and judgement giv'n, 10
 That brought into this world a world of woe,
 Sin, and her shadow Death, and Misery,
 Death's harbinger; Sad task, yet argument
 Not less, but more heroic than the wrath
 Of stern Achilles on his foe pursu'd 15
 Thrice fugitive about Troy wall; or rage
 Of Turnus for Lavinia's disespous'd;
 Of Neptune's ire, or Juno's, that so long
 Perplex'd the Greek, and Cytherea's son;
 If answerable style I can obtain 20
 Of my celestial patroness, who deigns
 Her nightly visitation unimplor'd,
 And dictates to me slumb'ring, or inspires
 Easy my unpremeditated verse:
 Since first this subject for heroic song 25
 Pleas'd me, long chusing, and beginning late;
 Not sedulous by nature to indite
 Wars, hitherto the only argument
 Heroic deem'd, chief mast'ry to dissect
 With long and tedious havock fabled knights 30
 In battles feign'd; the better fortitude
 Of patience and heroic martyrdom
 Unsung; or to describe races and games,
 Or tilting furniture, emblazon'd shields,
 Impresses quaint, caparisons, and steeds;
 Bases and tinsel trappings, gorgeous knights
 At joust and tournament; then marshall'd feast
 Serv'd up in hall, with sewers, and seneschals;
 The skill of artifice or office mean,
 Not that which justly gives heroic name 40
 To person or to poem. Me of these
 Nor skill'd nor studious, higher argument
 Remains, sufficient of itself to raise
 That name, unless an age too late, or cold
 Climate, or years, damp my intended wing 45
 Depress'd, and much they may, if all be mine,

who brings it nightly to my ear.
 was sunk, and after him the star
 us, whose office is to bring
 upon the earth, short arbiter
 of day and night; and now from end to end
 of the sphere had veil'd th' horizon round,
 in, who late fled before the threats
 l'out of Eden, now improv'd
 ed fraud and malice, bent
 destruction; though what might hap
 on himself, fearless return'd.
 he fled, and at midnight return'd.
 passing the earth, cautious of day,
 l, regent of the sun, descry'd
 ce, and forewarn'd the Cherubim
 their watch; thence full of anguish driv'n,
 of sev'n continu'd nights he rode
 nefs, thrice the equinoctial line
 , four times cross'd the car of night
 to pole, traversing each colure;
 hth return'd, and on the coast averse
 ance on Cherubic watch, by stealth
 unsuspected way. There was a place,
 rough sin, not time, first wrought the change;
 ris, at the foot of Paradise,
 f shot under ground, till part
 fountain by the tree of life:
 : river sunk, and with it rose
 olv'd in rising mist; then sought
 ie hid: sea he had search'd, and land,
 n over Pontus, and the pool
 beyond the river Ob:
 l as far antarctic; and in length
 Orontes to the ocean barr'd
 , thence to the land where flows
 d Indus: thus the orb he roam'd
 ow search, and with inspection deep
 ev'ry creature, which of all
 tune might serve his wiles, and found
 at subtlest beast of all the field.
 long debate, irresolute

Of thoughts revolv'd, his final sentence chose
 Fit veil, fittest imp of fraud, in whom
 To enter, and his dark suggestions hide 90
 From sharpest sight: for in the wily snake,
 Whatever sleights none would suspicious mark,
 As from his wit and native subtilty
 Proceeding, which in other beasts observ'd
 Doubt might beget of diabolic pow'r 95
 Active within beyond the sense of brute.
 Thus he resolv'd, but first from inward grief
 His bursting passions into plaints thus pour'd.
 O Earth, how like to Heav'n, if not preferr'd
 More justly, seat worthier of Gods, as built 100
 With second thoughts, reforming what was old?
 For what God after better worse would build?
 'Terrestrial Heav'n, danc'd round by other Heav'ns
 That shine, yet bear their bright officious lamps,
 Light above light, for thee alone, as seems, 105
 In thee concent'ring all their precious beams
 Of sacred influence! As God in Heav'n
 Is center, yet extends to all; so thou
 Cent'ring receiv'st from all those orbs; in thee,
 Not in themselves, all their known virtue' appears 110
 Productive in herb, plant, and nobler birth
 Of creatures animate with gradual life
 Of growth, sense, reason, all summ'd up in Man.
 With what delight could I have walk'd thee round,
 If I could joy in ought, sweet interchange 115
 Of hill, and valley, rivers, woods, and plains,
 Now land, now sea, and shores with forest crown'd,
 Rocks, dens, and caves! but I in none of these
 Find place or refuge; and the more I see
 Pleasures about me, so much more I feel 120
 'Torment within me', as from the hateful siege
 Of contraries; all good to me becomes
 Bane, and in Heav'n much worse would be my state.
 But neither here seek I, no nor in Heav'n
 To dwell, unless by mak'ring heav'n's Supreme; 125
 Nor hope to be myself less miserable
 By what I seek, but others to make such
 As I, though thereby worse to me redound:

nly in destroying I find ease
 y relentless thoughts; and him destroy'd, 130
 on to what may work his utter loss,
 whom all this was made; all this will soon
 w, as to him link'd in weal or woe;
 e then that destruction wide may range:
 e shall be the glory sole among 135
 fernal Pow'rs, in one day to have marr'd
 he Almighty styl'd, six nights and days
 nu'd making, and who knows how long
 e had been contriving? though perhaps
 nger than since I in one night freed 140
 servitude inglorious well nigh half
 gelic name, and thinner left the throng
 adorers; he, to be aveng'd,
 to repair his numbers thus impair'd,
 her such virtue spent of old now fail'd 145
 Angels to create, if they at least
 is created; or, to spite us more,
 min'd to advance into our room
 ature form'd of earth, and him endow,
 ed from so base original, 150
 heav'nly spoils, our spoils: what he decreed,
 ffect'd; Man he made, and for him built,
 ificent this world, and earth his feat,
 lord pronounc'd, and, O indignity!
 sted to his service Angel wings, 155
 flaming ministers to watch and tend
 earthly charge. Of these the vigilance
 d, and to elude, thus wrapt in mist
 dnight vapour glide obscure, and pry
 ry bush or brake, where hap may find 160
 erpent, sleeping, in whose mazy folds
 de me and the dark intent I bring.
 I descent! that I who erst contended
 Gods to sit the high'est, am now constrain'd
 i beast, and mix'd with bestial slime, 165
 essence to incarnate and imbrute,
 to the heighth of Deity aspir'd.
 hat will not ambition and revenge
 ad to? *Who aspires, must down as low*

As high he soar'd, obnoxious, first or last, 170
 To basest things. Revenge, at first though sweet,
 Bitter ere long, back on itself recoils:
 Let it; I reck not, so it light well aim'd,
 Since higher I fall short, on him who next
 Provokes my envy, this new favourite 175
 Of Heav'n, this man of clay, son of despite,
 Whom us the more to spite his Maker rais'd
 From dust: spite then with spite is best repaid.
 So saying, through each thicket, dank or dry,
 Like a black mist low creeping, he held on 180
 His midnight search, where soonest he might find
 The serpent: him fast sleeping soon he found
 In labyrinth of many a round self-roll'd,
 His head the midst, well stor'd with subtles;
 Not yet in horrid shade or dismal den, 185
 Nor nocent yet, but on the grassy herb
 Fearless unfear'd he slept. In at his mouth
 The devil enter'd, and his brutal sense,
 In heart or head, possessing, soon inspir'd
 With act intelligential; but his sleep 190
 Disturb'd not, waiting close th' approach of morn.
 Now when a sacred light began to dawn
 In Eden on the humid flow'rs, that breath'd
 Their morning incense, when all things that breathe,
 From th' earth's great altar send up silent praise 195
 To the Creator, and his nostrils fill
 With grateful smell, forth came the human pair,
 And join'd their vocal worship to the quire
 Of creatures wanting voice; that done, partake
 The season, prime for sweetest scents and airs: 200
 Then commune how that day they best may ply
 Their growing work; for much their work outgrew
 The hands dispatch of two gard'ning so wide.
 And Eve first to her husband thus began.
 Adam, well may we labour still to dress 205
 This garden, still to tend plant, herb, and flow'r,
 Our pleasant task injoin'd; but till more hands
 Aid us, the work under our labour grows,
 Luxurious by restraint; what we by day
 Lop overgrown, or prune, or prop, or bind, 210

ight or two with wanton growth derides,
 ing to wild. Thou therefore now advise,
 ar what to my mind first thoughts present :
 is divide our labours ; thou where choice
 s thee, or where most needs, whether to wind 215
 woodbine round this arbour, or direct
 clasping ivy where to climb : while I
 nder spring of roses intermix'd
 myrtle, find what to redress till noon :
 hile so near other thus all day 220
 ask we chuse, what wonder if so near
 s interyene, and smiles, or object new
 al discourse drawn on, which intermits
 day's work, brought to little, though begun
 7, and th' hour of supper comes unearn'd ? 225
 whom mild answer Adam thus return'd.
 Eve, associate sole, to me beyond
 pare, above all living creatures dear,
 hast thou motion'd, well thy thoughts employ'd,
 we best might fulfil the work which here 230
 hath assign'd us ; nor of me shall pass
 rais'd : for nothing lovelier can be found
 oman, than to study household good,
 good works in her husband to promote.
 ot so strictly hath our Lord impos'd 235
 ur, as to debar us when we need
 eshment, whether food, or talk between,
 of the mind, or this sweet intercourse
 oks and smiles ; for smiles from reason flow,
 rute deny'd, and are of love the food, 240
 : not the lowest end of human life.
 ot to irksome toil, but to delight
 made us, and delight to reason join'd.
 e paths and bow'rs doubt not but our joint hands
 keep from wilderness with ease as wide 245
 ve need walk, till younger hands ere long
 t us. But if much converse perhaps
 : satiate, to short absence I could yield :
 solitude sometimes is best society,
 short retirement urges sweet return. 250
 other doubt possesses me, lest harm

Befal thee fever'd from me ; for thou know'ft
 What hath been warn'd us, what malicious foe
 Envyng our happiness, and of his own
 Despairing, seeks to work us woe and shame 255
 By fly assault ; and somewhere nigh at hand
 Watches no doubt, with greedy hope to find
 His wish and best advantage, us afunder ;
 Hopeless to circumvent us join'd, where each
 'To other speedy aid might lend at need, 260
 Whether his first design be to withdraw
 Our fealty from God, or to disturb
 Conjugal love, than which perhaps no bliss
 Enjoy'd by us excites his envy more :
 Or this, or worse, leave not the faithful side 265
 That gave thee be'ing, still shades thee, and protects.
 The wife, where danger and dishonour lurks,
 Safest and seemliest by her husband slays,
 Who guards her, or with her the worst endures.
 To whom the virgin majesty of Eve, 270
 As one who loves, and some unkindness meets,
 With sweet austere composure thus reply'd.
 Offspring of heav'n and earth, and all earth's lord,
 That such an enemy we have, who seeks
 Our ruin, both by thee inform'd I learn, 275
 And from the parting Angel overheard,
 As in a shady nook I stood behind,
 Just then return'd at flut of ev'ning flowers.
 But that thou should'st my firmness therefore doubt
 To God or thee, because we have a foe 280
 May tempt it, I expected not to hear.
 His violence thou fear'st not, being such
 As we, not capable of death or pain,
 Can either not receive, or can repel.
 His fraud is then thy fear ; which plain infers 285
 Thy equal fear, that my firm faith and love
 Can by his fraud be shaken or seduc'd ;
 Thoughts, which how found they harbour in thy breast,
 Adam, misthought of her to thee so dear ?
 To whom with healing words Adam reply'd. 290
 Daughter of God and man, immortal Eve,
 For such thou art, from sin and blame entire :

confident of thee do I dissuade
 absence from my sight, but to avoid
 attempt itself, intended by our foe. 295
 he who tempts, though' in vain, at least asperse
 tempted with dishonour foul, suppos'd
 incorruptible of faith, not proof
 nst temptation : thou thyself with scorn
 anger would resent the offer'd wrong, 300
 igh ineffectual found : misdeem not then,
 ch affront I labour to avert
 r thee alone, which on us both at once
 enemy, though bold, will hardly dare ;
 aring, first on me th' assault shall light. 305
 thou his malice and false guile contemn ;
 le he needs must be, who could seduce
 els ; nor think superfluous other's aid.
 m th' influence of thy looks receive
 s in ev'ry virtue, in thy sight 310
 e wise, more watchful, stronger, if need were
 utward strength ; while shame, thou looking on,
 ne to be overcome, or over-reach'd,
 ld utmost vigour raise, and rais'd unite.
 r should'st not thou like sense within thee feel 315
 n I am present, and thy trial chuse
 r me, best witness of thy virtue try'd ?
 o spoke domestic Adam in his care
 l matrimonial love ; but Eve, who thought
 attributed to her faith sincere, 320
 s her reply with accent sweet renew'd.
 ' this be our condition, thus to dwell
 arrow circuit straiten'd by a foe.
 ile or violent, we not endu'd
 ile with like defence, wherever met, 325
 v are we happy, still in fear of harm ?
 harm precedes not sin : only our foe
 apting affronts us with his foul esteem
 our integrity : his foul esteem .
 ks no dishonour on our affront, but turns 330
 l on himself ; then wherefore shun'd or fear'd
 us ? who rather double honour gain
 m his surmise prov'd false ; find peace within,

Favour from Heav'n, our witness from th' event.
 And what is faith, love, virtue, unessay'd 335
 Alone, without exterior help sustain'd?
 Let us not then suspect our happy state
 Left so imperfect by the Maker wise,
 As not secure to single or combin'd.
 Frail is our happiness, if this be so,
 And Eden were not Eden thus expos'd. 340
 To whom thus Adam fervently reply'd.
 O woman, best are all things as the will
 Of God ordain'd them: his creating hand
 Nothing imperfect or deficient left 345
 Of all that he created; much less man,
 Or ought that might his happy state secure,
 Secure from outward force; within himself
 The danger lies, yet lies within his pow'r:
 Against his will he can receive no harm. 350
 But God left free the will; for what obeys
 Reason, is free; and reason he made right,
 But bid her well beware, and still erect,
 Left by some fair appearing good surpris'd
 She dictate false, and misinform the will 355
 To do what God expressly hath forbid.
 Not then mistrust, but tender love, enjoins,
 That I should mind thee oft, and mind thou me.
 Firm we subsist, yet possible to swerve;
 Since reason not impossibly may meet 360
 Some specious object by the foe suborn'd,
 And fall into deception unaware,
 Not keeping strictest watch, as she was warn'd,
 Slack not temptation then, which to avoid
 Were better, and most likely if from me 365
 Thou sever not: trial will come unsought.
 Would'st thou approve thy constancy? approve
 First thy obedience: th' other who can know,
 Not seeing thee attempted? who attest?
 But if thou think, trial unsought may find 370
 Us both securer than thus warn'd thou seem'st,
 Go; for thy stay, not free, absents thee more;
 Go in thy native innocence, rely
 On what thou hast of virtue, summon all;

on towards thee hath done his part, do thine. 375
 spake the patriarch of mankind; but Eve
 led, yet submits, though last, reply'd.
 th thy permission then, and thus forewarn'd,
 y by what thy own last reas'ning words
 r'd only, that our trial when least sought, 380
 find us both perhaps far less prepar'd,
 villinger I go; nor much expect
 so proud will first the weaker seek;
 nt, the more shall shame him his repulse.
 us saying, from her husband's hand her hand 385
 he withdrew, and like a wood-nymph light
 t or Dryad, or of Delia's train,
 k her to the groves; but Delia's self
 it surpass'd, and goddess-like deport;
 igh not, as she, with bow and quiver arm'd, 390
 with such gard'ning tools as art yet rude,
 less of fire, had form'd, or Angels brought.
 allas, or Pomona, thus adorn'd,
 t she seem'd, Pomona, when she fled
 imnus, or to Ceres in her prime, 395
 irgin of Proserpina from Jove.
 long with ardent look his eye pursu'd
 ghted, but desiring more her stay.
 ie to her his charge of quick return
 ated; she to him as oft engag'd 400
 e return'd by noon amid the bow'r,
 all things in best order to invite
 itide repast, or afternoon's repose.
 uch deceiv'd, much failing, hapless Eve,
 y presum'd return! event perverse! 405
 i never from that hour in Paradise
 id't either sweet repast, or sound repose;
 ambush hid among sweet flow'rs and shades,
 ed with hellish rancour imminent
 tercept thy way, or send thee back 410
 oil'd of innocence, of faith, of bliss:
 now, and since first break of dawn, the fiend
 : serpent in appearance, forth was come,
 on his quest, where likeliest he might find
 only two of mankind, but in them 415

The whole included race, his purpos'd prey.
 In bow'r and field he sought, where any tuft
 Of grove or garden plot more pleasant lay,
 Their tendance, or plantation for delight;
 By fountain or by shady rivulet 420
 He sought them both, but wish'd his hap might find
 Eve separate: he wish'd, but not with hope
 Of what is seldom chanc'd: when to his wish,
 Beyond his hope, Eve separate he spies,
 Veil'd in a cloud of fragrance, where the flood 425
 Half spy'd, so thick the roses bushing round
 About her glow'd; oft stooping to support
 Each flow'r of slender stalk, whose head though gay
 Carnation, purple, azure or speck'd with gold,
 Hung drooping unsustain'd: them she upstays 430
 Gently with myrtle band; mindless the while
 Herself, though fairest unsupported flow'r,
 From her best prop so far, and storm so nigh.
 Nearer he drew, and many a walk travers'd
 Of stateliest covert, cedar, pine, or palm; 435
 Then voluble and bold, now hid, now seen
 Among thick woven arborets and flow'rs
 Imborder'd on each bank, the hand of Eve:
 Spot more delicious than those gardens feign'd
 Or of reviv'd Adonis; or renovin'd 440
 Alcinous, host of old Laertes' son;
 Or that, not mystic, where the sapient king
 Held dalliance with his fair Egyptian spouse.
 Much he the place admir'd. the person more,
 As one who long in populous city pent, 445
 Where houses thick and sewers annoy th' air,
 Forth issuing on a summer's morn to breathe
 Among the pleasant villages and farms
 Adjoin'd, from each thing met conceives delight;
 The smell of grain, or teded grafs, or kine, 450
 Or dairy, each rural sight, each rural sound;
 If chance, with nymphlike step, fair virgin pass,
 What pleasing seem'd, for her now pleases more,
 She most, and in her look sums all delight;
 Such pleasure took the Serpent to behold 455
 This flow'ry plat, the sweet recess of Eve

early, thus alone; her heav'nly form
 ic, but more soft, and feminine,
 raceful innocence, her ev'ry air
 ture, or least action, overaw'd 469
 alicc, and with rapine sweet bereav'd
 rceness of the fierce intent it brought:
 pace the evil one abstracted stood
 his own ev'il, and from the time remain'd
 ly good, of enmity disarm'd, 465
 le, of hate, of envy, or revenge.
 e hot hell that always in him burns,
 h in mid heav'n, soon ended his delight;
 gtures him now more, the more he sees
 asure not for him ordain'd: then soon 470
 hate he recollects, and all his thoughts
 chief, gratulating, thus excites.
 ights, whither have ye led me! with what sweet
 llion thus transported, to forget
 hither brought us! hate, not love, no hope 475
 adise for hell, hope here to taste
 asure, but all pleasure to destroy,
 what is in destroying; other joy
 : is lost. Then let me not let pass
 on which now smiles. Behold alone 480
 oman, opportune to all attempts;
 usband, for I view far round, not nigh
 : higher intellectual more I shun,
 rength of courage haughty, and of limb
 : built, though of terrestrial mould; 485
 it unformidable, exempt from wound;
 so much hath hell debas'd, and pain
 led me, to what I was in Heav'n.
 ir, divinely fair, fit love for Gods,
 rrible, though terror be in love 490
 eauty not approach'd by stronger hate,
 longer, under shew of love well feign'd,
 ay which to her ruin now I tend.
 ke th' enemy of mankind, inclos'd
 ent, inmate bad, and towards Eve 495
 is'd his way, not with indented wave
 on the ground, as since, but on his tear,

Circular base of rising folds, that tow'r'd
 Fold above fold, a surging maze; his head
 Crested aloft, and carbuncle his eyes; 500
 With burnish'd neck of verdant gold, crest
 Amidst his circling spires that on the grass
 Floated redundant: pleasing was his shape,
 And lovely: never since of serpent kind
 Lovelier; not those that in Illyria chang'd 505
 Hermione and Cadmus, or the god
 In Epidaurus; nor to which transform'd
 Ammonian Jove, or Capitoline was seen;
 He with Olympias, this with her who bore
 Scipio the height of Rome. With tract oblique 510
 At first, as one who sought access, but fear'd
 To interrupt, side long he works his way.
 As when a ship by skilful steersman wrought
 Nigh river's mouth, or foreland where the wind
 Veers oft, as oft so steers, and shifts her sail: 515
 So varied he. and of his tortuous train
 Curl'd many a wanton wreath in sight of Eve,
 To lure her eye. She busied heard the sound
 Of rustling leaves; but minded not, as us'd,
 To such disport before her through the field, 520
 From ev'ry beast, more duteous at her call,
 Than at Circean call the herd disguis'd.
 He bolder now, uncall'd before her stood,
 But as in gaze admiring: oft he bow'd
 His turret crest, and sleek enamell'd neck, 525
 Fawning, and lick'd the ground whereon she trod.
 His gentle dumb expression turn'd at length
 The eye of Eve to mark his play; he glad
 Of her attention gain'd, with serpent tongue
 Organic, or impulse of vocal air, 530
 His fraudulent temptation thus began.

Wonder not, sov'reign mistress, if perhaps
 Thou canst, who art sole wonder; much less arm
 Thy looks, the heav'n of mildness, with disdain,
 Displeas'd that I approach thee thus, and gaze 535
 Infatiate; I thus single; nor have fear'd
 Thy awful brow, more awful thus retir'd.
 Fairest resemblance of thy Maker fair,

all things living gaze on, all things thine
 fit, and thy celestial beauty' adore, 540
 the ravishment beheld, there best beheld
 the universally admir'd; but here
 is inclusion wild, these beasts among,
 leaders rude, and shallow to discern
 what in thee is fair, one man except, 545
 sees thee? (and what is one?) who shouldst be seen
 adde'st among gods, ador'd and serv'd
 angels numberless, thy daily train.
 seiz'd the tempter, and his proem tun'd;
 the heart of Eve his words made way, 550
 though at the voice much marvelling; at length
 amaz'd she thus in answer spake.
 What may this mean? language of man pronounc'd
 in brute, and human sense express'd
 first at least of these I thought deny'd 555
 casts, whom God on their creation day
 ord'ed mute to all articulate sound:
 how durst I demur: for in their looks
 reason, and in their actions, oft appears.
 O serpent, subtlest beast of all the field 560
 how, but not with human voice endu'd;
 how able then this miracle, and say,
 how cam'st thou speakable of mute? and how
 art thou so friendly grown above the rest
 brutish kind, that daily are in sight? 565
 for such wonder claims attention due.
 To whom the guileful tempter thus reply'd.
 O refs of this fair world; resplendent Eve,
 it is to me to tell thee all
 that thou command'st, and right thou should'st be
 obey'd. 570
 As at first as other beasts that graze
 trodden herb, of abject thoughts and low
 as my food; nor ought but food discern'd
 to see, and apprehended nothing high:
 on a day roving the field, I chanc'd 575
 a solitary tree far distant to behold,
 laden with fruit of fairest colours mix'd,
 of gold and silver: I nearer drew to gaze;

When from the boughs a favoury odour blown,
 Grateful to appetite, more pleas'd my sense 580
 Than smell of sweetest fenel, or the teats
 Of ewe or goat dropping with milk at ev'n,
 Unfuck'd of lamb or kid, that tend their play.

To satisfy the sharp desire I had
 Of tasting those fair apples, I resolv'd 585
 Not to defer; hunger and thirst at once,
 Pow'rful persuaders, quicken'd at the scent
 Of that alluring fruit, urg'd me so keen.

About the mossy trunk I wound me soon;
 For high from ground the branches would require 590
 Thy utmost reach, or Adam's: round the tree
 All other beasts that saw, with like desire
 Longing and envying stood, but could not reach.

Amid the tree now got, where plenty hung
 Tempting so nigh, to pluck and eat my fill 595
 I spar'd not; for such pleasure till that hour
 At feed or fountain never had I found.

Sated at length, ere long I might perceive
 Strange alteration in me, to degree 600
 Of reason in my inward pow'rs, and speech

Wanted not long, though to this shape retain'd.
 Thenceforth to speculations high or deep
 I turn'd my thoughts; and, with capacious mind,
 Consider'd all things visible in Heav'n,
 Or Earth, or Middle, all things fair and good; 605

But all that fair and good in thy divine
 Semblance, and in thy beauty's heav'nly ray,
 United I beheld; no fair to thine
 Equivalent or second, which compell'd
 Me thus, though importune perhaps, to come 610
 And gaze, and worship thee, of right declar'd
 Sov'reign of creatures, universal dame.

So talk'd the spirited sly Snake; and Eve
 Yet more amaz'd unwary thus reply'd. 615
 Serpent, thy overpraising leaves in doubt

The virtue of that fruit, in thee first prov'd;
 But say, where grows the tree, from hence how far?

For many are the trees of God that grow
 In Paradise, and various, yet unknown

IX. PARADISE LOST. 205

: in such abundance lies our choice, 620
 ves a greater store of fruit untouch'd,
 anging incorruptible, till men
 up to their provision, and more hands
 to disburden Nature of her birth.
 whom the wily adder, blithe and glad. 625
 es, the way is ready, and not long ;
 id a row of myrtles, on a flat,
 y a fountain, one small thicket past
 owing myrrh and balm : if thou accept
 onduct, I can bring thee thither soon. 630
 id thou, said Eve. He leading swiftly roll'd
 gles, and made intricate seem straight,
 ischief swift. Hope elevates, and joy
 tens his crest ; as when a wand'ring fire,
 act of unctuous vapour, which the night 635
 enses, and the cold environs round,
 ed through agitation to a flame,
 h oft they say, some evil Sp'rit attends,
 ring, and blazing with delusive light
 ads th' amaz'd night wand'rer from his way, 640
 ogs and mires, and oft through pond or pool,
 : swallow'd up and lost, from succour far.
 ifter'd the dire Snake, and into fraud
 Eve, our credulous mother, to the tree
 ohibition, root of all our woe : 645
 h when she saw, thus to her guide she spake.
 pent, we might have spar'd our coming hither,
 less to me, though fruit be here t' excels ;
 redit of whose virtue rest with thee,
 d'rous indeed, if cause of such effects. 650
 if this tree we may not taste nor touch ;
 so commanded, and left that command
 daughter of his voice ; the rest, we live
 to ourselves, our reason is our law.
 whom the tempter guilefully reply'd. 655
 ed ? hath God then said that of the fruit
 l these garden-trees ye shall not eat ?
 ords declar'd of all in earth or air.
 whom thus Eve, yet sinless. Of the fruit
 ch tree in the garden we may eat ; 660

If of death removes the fear.
 Is this forbid? Why but to awe,
 Deep ye low and ignorant,
 Knows? he knows, that in the day 705
 Your eyes that seem so clear,
 Shall perfectly be then
 Lear'd, and ye shall be as gods,
 As good and evil as they know.
 Be as gods, since I as Man, 710
 Is but proportion meet;
 Man; ye of human, gods.
 Perhaps, by putting off
 Death on gods; death to be wish'd,
 Ten'd, which no worse than this can bring
 Gods, that Man may not become 715
 Participating god-like food?
 First, and that advantage use
 That all from them proceeds:
 For this fair earth I see, 720
 The sun, producing every kind,
 If they all things, who inclos'd
 Good and evil in this tree,
 Ats thereof, forthwith attains
 Out their leave? and wherein lies 725
 That man should thus attain to know?
 If knowledge hurt him, or this tree
 Against his will, if all be his?
 And can envy dwell
 In earths? these, these, and many more 730
 To your need of this fair fruit.
 Reach then, and freely taste.
 And his words replete with guile
 Too easy entrance won:
 Fruit she gaz'd, which to behold 735
 Done; and in her ears the sound
 Of persuasive words, impregn'd
 To her seeming, and with truth;
 The hour of noon drew on, and wak'd
 Her appetite, rais'd by the smell 740
 That fruit, which with desire,
 Was grown to touch and taste,

Solicited her longing eye : yet first
 Pausing a while. thus to herself she mus'd.
 Great are thy virtues doubtless best of fruits, 745
 Though kept from man, and worthy to be admir'd;
 Whose taste, too long forborne, at first essay
 Gave elocution to the mute, and taught
 The tongue not made for speech to speak thy praise:
 Thy praise he also who forbids thy use 750
 Conceals not from us, naming thee the tree
 Of knowledge, knowledge both of good and evil;
 Forbids us then to taste : but his forbidding
 Commends thee more, while it infers the good
 By thee communicated, and our want : 755
 For good unknown, sure is not had ; or had,
 And yet unknown, is as not had at all.
 In plain then, what forbids he but to know,
 Forbids us good, forbids us to be wise ?
 Such prohibitions bind not. But if death 760
 Bind us with after bands, what profits then
 Our inward freedom ? In the day we eat
 Of this fair fruit, our doom is, we shall die.
 How dies the serpent ? he hath eat'n and lives,
 And knows, and speaks, and reasons, and discerns, 765
 Irrational, till then. For us alone
 Was death invented ? or to us deny'd
 This intellectual food, for beasts reserv'd ?
 For beasts it seems : yet that one beast which first
 Hath tasted, envies not, but brings with joy 770
 The good befall'n him, author unsuspect,
 Friendly to man, far from deceit or guile ;
 What fear I then, rather what know to fear
 Under this ignorance of good and evil,
 Of God or death, of law or penalty ? 775
 Here grows the cure of all, this fruit divine,
 Fair to the eye, inviting to the taste,
 Of virtue to make wise : what hinders then
 To reach, and feed at once both body' and mind ?
 So saying, her rash hand in evil hour 780
 Forth reaching to the fruit, she pluck'd, she eat :
 Earth felt the wound ; and nature from her seat,
 Sighing through all her works, gave signs of woe,

IX. PARADISE LOST. 209

all was lost. Back to the thicket slunk
 guilty Serpent: and well might; for Eve 785
 : now wholly on her taste naught else
 ded, such delight till then, as seem'd,
 it she never tasted, whether true
 icy'd so, through expectation high
 owledge: nor was Godhead from her thought.
 lily she ingorg'd without restraint, 791
 knew not eating death. Sate at length,
 heighten'd as with wine, jocund and boon
 to herself she pleasingly began.
 òv'reign, virtuous, precious of all trees 795
 radise, of operation blest'd
 pience, hitherto obscur'd, infam'd,
 thy fair fruit let hang, as to no end
 ed; but henceforth my early care,
 ithout song, each morning, and due praise, 800
 tend thee, and the fertile burden ease
 y full branches, offer'd free to all;
 ieted by thee I grow mature
 owledge, as the gods, who all things know;
 gh others envy what they cannot give; 805
 ad the gift been theirs, it had not here
 grown. Experience, next to thee I owe,
 guide; not following thee, I had remain'd
 orance; thou open'st wisdom's way,
 giv'st access, though secret she retire. 810
 I perhaps am secret; Heav'n is high,
 , and remote to see from thence distinct
 thing on earth; and other care perhaps
 have diverted from continual watch
 great forbidder, safe with all his spies 815
 it him. But to Adam in what sort
 I appear? shall I to him make known
 at my change, and give him to partake
 happiness with me; or rather not,
 keep the odds of knowledge in my pow'r 820
 out copartner? so to add what wants
 male sex, the more to draw his love,
 render me more equal, and perhaps,
 ng not undesirable, sometimes

Superior; for inferior who is free? 835
 'This may be well. But what if God have seen,
 And death ensue? then I shall be no more,
 And Adam wedded to another Eve,
 Shall live with her enjoying, I extinct?
 A death to think. Confirm'd then I resolve, 830
 Adam shall share with me in bliss or woe;
 So dear I love him, that with him all deaths
 I could endure, without him live no life.
 So saying, from the tree her step she turn'd;
 But first low rev'rence done, as to the pow'r 835
 That dwelt within: whose presence had infus'd
 Into the plant scintial sap, deriv'd
 From nectar, drink of gods. Adam the while,
 Waiting desirous her return, had wove
 Of choicest flow'rs a garland to adorn 840
 Her tresses, and her rural labours crown,
 As reapers oft are wont their harvest queen.
 Great joy he promis'd to his thoughts, and new
 Solace in her return, so long delay'd:
 Yet oft his heart, divine of something ill, 845
 Misgave him; he the falt'ring measure felt;
 And for to meet her went, the way she took
 That morn when first they parted. By the tree
 Of knowledge he must pass; there he her met,
 Scarce from the tree returning; in her hand 850
 A bough of fairest fruit, that downy smil'd,
 New gather'd, and ambrosial smell diffus'd.
 To him she halted: in her face excuse
 Came prologue, and apology too prompt,
 Which with bland words at will she thus address'd. 855
 Hast thou not wonder'd, Adam, at my stay?
 Thee I have miss'd, and thought it long, depriv'd
 Thy presence, agony of love till now
 Not felt, nor shall be twice; for never more
 Mean I to try, what rash untry'd I sought, 860
 The pain of absence from thy sight. But strange
 Hath been the cause, and wonderful to hear.
 This tree is not, as we are told, a tree
 Of danger tasted, nor t' evil unknown
 Op'ning the way; but of divine effect. 865

n eyes, and make them gods who taste ;
 ath been tasted such ; the serpent wise,
 restrain'd as we, or not obeying,
 aten of the fruit, and is become,
 ad, as we are threaten'd, but henceforth **870**
 l with human voice and human sense,
 ing to admiration, and with me
 ively hath so prevail'd, that I
 lso tasted, and have also found
 ects to correspond ; op'ner mine eyes, **875**
 ft, dilated spirits, ampler heart,
 owing up to godhead ; which for thee
 I fought, without thee can despise.
 sa, as thou hast part, to me is bliss :
 s unshar'd with thee, and odious soon. **880**
 herefore also taste, that equal lot
 in us, equal joy, as equal love ;
 ou not tasting, different degree
 us, and I then too late renounce
 or thee, when fate will not permit. **885**
 ve with count'nance blithe her story told ;
 her cheek distemper flushing glow'd.
 other side, Adam, soon as he heard
 al trespass done by Eve, amaz'd,
 h'd stood, and blank, while horror chill **890**
 ough his veins, and all his joints relax'd ;
 is slack hand the garland wreath'd for Eve
 dropt, and all the faded roses shed :
 less he stood, and pale ; till thus at length
 himself he inward silence broke. **895**
 rest of creation, last and best
 OD's works, creature in whom excell'd
 ver can to fight or thought be form'd,
 livine, good, amiable, or sweet !
 rt thou lost, how on a sudden lost, **900**
 l, deslow'r'd, and now to death devote ?
 , how hast thou yielded to transgress
 ist forbiddance, how to violate
 red fruit forbid'n ? Some cursed fraud
 ny hath beguil'd thee, yet unknown : **905**
 e with thee hath ruin'd : for with thee

Certain my resolution is to die ;
 How can I live without thee, how forego
 Thy sweet converse and love so dearly join'd,
 To live again in these wild woods forlorn ? 910
 Should God create another Eve, and I
 Another rib afford, yet loss of thee
 Would never from my heart : no, no, I feel
 The link of nature draw me : flesh of flesh,
 Bone of my bone thou art, and from thy state 915
 Mine never shall be parted, bliss or woe.
 So having said, as one from sad dismay
 Recomforted, and, after thoughts disturb'd,
 Submitting to what seem'd remediless,
 Thus in calm mood his words to Eve he turn'd. 920
 Bold deed thou hast presum'd, advent'rous Eve,
 And peril great provok'd, who thus hast dar'd,
 Had it been only coveting to eye
 That sacred fruit, sacred to abstinence,
 Much more to taste it, under ban to touch. 925
 But pass who can recal, or done undo ?
 Not God omnipotent, nor fate ; yet so
 Perhaps thou shalt not die, perhaps the fact
 Is not so heinous now, foretasted fruit,
 Profan'd first by the serpent, by him first 930
 Made common and unhallow'd ere our taste :
 Nor yet on him found deadly ; he yet lives,
 Lives, as thou saidst, and gains to live as man,
 Higher degree of life ; inducement strong
 To us, as likely tasting to attain 935
 Proportional ascent, which cannot be
 But by the Gods, or Angels, Demi gods.
 Nor can I think, that God, Creator wise,
 Though threat'ning, will in earnest so destroy
 Us his prime creatures, dignify'd so high 940
 Set over all his works ; which in our fall,
 For us created, needs with us must fail,
 Dependent made : so God shall uncreate,
 Be frustrate, do. undo, and labour lose ;
 Not well conceiv'd of God, who though his pow'r 945
 Creation could repeat, yet would be loath
 Us to abolish, lest the adversary

ph, and say; Fickle their state whom God
 favours; who can please him long? Me first
 n'd, now mankind: whom will he next? 950
 of scorn, not to be giv'n the foe;
 ver, I with thee have fix'd my lot,
 to undergo like doom: if death
 t with thee, death is to me as life;
 cible within my heart I feel 955
 nd of nature draw me to my own,
 m in thee, for what thou art is mine;
 ate can not be sever'd, we are one,
 sh; to lose thee were to lose myself.
 Adam; and thus Eve to him reply'd, 960
 ious trial of exceeding love,
 ous evidence. example high!
 ing me to emulate, but short
 perfection, how shall I attain,
 ? from whose dear side I boast me sprung, 965
 gladly of thy union hear thee speak,
 eart, one soul in both; whereof good proof
 lay affords, declaring thee resolv'd,
 r than death, or ought than death more dread,
 eparate us, link'd in love so dear, 970
 dergo with me one guilt, one crime,
 be, of tasting this fair fruit,
 e virtue (for of good still good proceeds,
 ; or by occasion) hath presented
 appy trial of thy love, which else 975
 inently never had been known.
 it I thought death menac'd would ensue
 ny attempt, I would sustain alone
 orst, and not persuade thee; rather die
 ted, than oblige thee with a fact 980
 ious to thy peace; chiefly assur'd
 rkably so late of thy so true,
 thful love unequal'd, but I feel
 therwise th' event, not death, but life
 nented, open'd eyes, new hopes, new joys, 985
 so divine, that what of sweet before
 touch'd my sense. flat seems to this, and harsh.
 y experience, Adam, freely taste,

And fear of death deliver to the winds.

So saying, she embrac'd him, and for joy 998
Tenderly wept; much won, that he his love
Had so ennobled, as of choice t' incur
Divine displeasure for her sake, or death,
In recompense (for such compliance bad
Such recompense best merits) for the bough 999
She gave him of that fair enticing fruit
With liberal hand: he scrupled not to eat,
Against his better knowledge; not deceiv'd,
But fondly overcome with female charm.
Earth trembled from her entrails, as again 1000
In pangs; and Nature gave a second groan;
Sky lour'd, and uttering thunder, some sad drops
Wept at completing of the mortal sin
Original; while Adam took no thought,
Eating his fill; nor Eve to iterate 1003
Her former trespass fear'd, the more to soothe
Him with her lov'd society; that now;
As with new wines intoxicated both,
They swim in mirth, and fancy that they feel
Divinity within them breeding wings 1010
Wherewith to scorn the earth. But that false fruit
Far other operation first display'd,
Carnal desire inflaming; he on Eve
Began to cast lascivious eyes, she him
As wantonly repaid; in lust they burnt 1015
Till Adam thus 'gan Eve to dalliance move.

Eve, now I see thou art exact of taste,
And elegant of sapience no small part,
Since to each meaning savour we apply,
And palate call judicious: I the praise 1020
Yield thee, so well this day thou hast purvey'd.
Much pleasure we have lost, while we abstain'd
From this delightful fruit, nor known till now,
True relish tasting; if such pleasure be
In things to us forbid'n, it might be wish'd, 1025
For this one tree had been forbidden ten.
But come, so well refresh'd, now let us play,
As meet is, after such delicious fare;
For never did thy beauty since the day

X PARADISE LOST. 215

ce first, and wedded thee, adorn'd 1030
 l' perfection, so inflame my sense
 'dour to enjoy thee, fairer now
 rer, bounty of this virtuous tree.
 d he, and forbore not glance or toy
 rous intent; well understood 1035
 whose eyes darted contagious fire;
 id he seiz'd, and to a shady bank,
 verhead with verdant roof imbow'r'd,
 her nothing loath; flow'rs were the couch,
 and violets, and asphodel, 1040
 acinth, earth's freshest softest lap;
 hey their fill of love, and love's disport
 rgely of their mutual guilt the seal,
 ice of their sin; till dewy sleep
 'd them, wearied with their amorous play. 1045
 as the force of that fallacious fruit,
 th exhilarating vapour bland
 heir sp'rits had play'd, and inmost pow'rs
 r, was now exhal'd; and grosser sleep
 unkind fumes, with conscious dreams 1050
 er'd, now had left them; up they rose
 i unrest, and each th' other viewing,
 and their eyes how open'd, and their minds
 rken'd; innocence, that as a veil
 dow'd them from knowing ill, was gone; 1055
 ifidence, and native righteousness,
 nour from about them, naked left
 ty shame; he cover'd, but his robe
 r'd more. So rose the Danite strong,
 an Samson, from the harlot-lap 1060
 iftean Delilah, and wak'd
 f his strength; they destitute and bare
 heir virtue: silent, and in face
 nded, long they sat, as stricken mute:
 am, though not less than Eve abash'd, 1065
 th wave utterance to these words constrain'd.
 re, in evil hour thou did'st give ear
 : false worm. of whomsoever taught
 rterfeit man's voice; true in our fall,
 our promis'd rising; since our eyes 1070

Was I t' have never parted from thy side ?
 As good have grown there still a lifeless rib.
 Being as I am, why did'st not thou the head 1155
 Command me absolutely not to go,
 Going into such danger as thou said'st !
 Too facile then thou did'st not much gainfay ;
 Nay, did'st permit, approve, and fair dismiss.
 Had'st thou been firm and fix'd in thy dissent, 1160
 Neither had I transgress'd ; nor thou with me.
 To whom then first incens'd, Adam reply'd.
 Is this the love, is this the recompense
 Of mine to thee, ungrateful Eve, express'd
 Immutable, when thou wert lost, not I ; 1165
 Who might have liv'd, and joy'd immortal bliss,
 Yet willingly chose rather death with thee ?
 And am I now upbraided as the cause
 Of thy transgressing ? not enough severe,
 It seems, in thy restraint ; what could I more ? 1170
 I warn'd thee, I admonish'd thee, foretold
 The danger, and the lurking enemy
 That lay in wait ; beyond this had been force,
 And force upon free will hath here no place.
 But confidence then bore thee on, secure. 1175
 Either to meet no danger, or to find
 Matter of glorious trial ; and perhaps
 I also err'd in overmuch admiring
 What seem'd in thee so perfect, that I thought
 No evil durst attempt thee ; but I rue 1180
 That error now, which is become my crime,
 And thou th' accuser. Thus it shall befall
 Him who to worth in woman overtrusting,
 Lets her will rule : restraint she will not brook ;
 And left t' herself, if evil thence ensue, 1185
 She first his weak indulgence will accuse.
 Thus they in mutual accusation spent
 The fruitless hours, but neither self-condemning,
 And of their vain contest appear'd no end.

END OF THE NINTH BOOK.

PARADISE LOST.

B O O K X.

THE ARGUMENT.

Man's transgression known, the guardian Angels forsake Paradise, and return up to Heaven to approve their vigilance; and are approved, God declaring that the entrance of Satan could not be by them prevented. He sends his Son to judge the transgressors; who descends, and gives sentence accordingly; then in pity clothes them and reascends. Sin and death sitting till then at the gates of hell, by wondrous sympathy feeling the success of Satan in this new world, and the sin by man there committed, resolve to sit no longer confined in hell, but to follow Satan their sire up to the place of man: To make the way easier from hell to this world to and fro, they pave a broad high-way or bridge over Chaos, according to the track that Satan first made; then preparing for earth, they meet him, proud of his success, returning to hell; their mutual gratulation. Satan arrives at Pandemonium, in full assembly relates with boasting his success against man; instead of applause, is entertained with a general hiss by all his audience, transformed with himself also suddenly into serpents, according to his doom given in Paradise; then deluded with a shew of the forbidden tree springing up before them, they greedily reaching to take of the fruit, chew dust and bitter ashes. The proceedings of Sin and Death: God foretells the final victory of his Son over them, and the renewing of all things; but for the present commands his Angels to make several alterations in the heavens and elements. Adam more and more perceiving his fallen condition, heavily bewails; rejects the condolence of Eve; she persists, and at length appeases him: then, to evade the curse likely to fall on their offspring, proposes to Adam violent ways, which he approves not; but conceiving bet-

ter hopes, puts her in mind of the late promise made them, that her seed should be revenged on the serpent, and exhorts her with him to seek peace of the offended Deity, by repentance and supplication.

MEAN while the heinous and despitèful act
 Of Satan done in Paradise, and how
 He in the serpent had perverted Eve,
 Her husband she, to taste the fatal fruit,
 Was known in heav'n; for what can 'scape the eye
 Of God all-seeing, or deceive his heart
 Omniscient? who, in all things wise and just,
 Hindered not Satan to attempt the mind
 Of man, with strength entire, and free will arm'd,
 Complete to have discover'd and repuls'd 10
 Whatever wiles of foe or seeming friend.
 For still they knew, and ought t' have still remember'd
 The high injunction not to taste that fruit,
 Whoever tempted; which they not obeying,
 Incurr'd (what could they less?) the penalty, 15
 And manifold in sin, deserv'd to fall.

Up into heav'n from Paradise in haste
 Th' angelic guards ascended, mute and sad
 For Man; for of his state by this they knew,
 Much wond'ring how the subtle fiend had stol'n 20
 Entrance unseen. Soon as th' unwelcome news
 From earth arriv'd at heav'n gate, displeas'd
 All were who heard; dim sadness did not spare
 That time celestial visages, yet mix'd
 With pity, violated not their bliss. 25
 About the new-arriv'd, in multitudes
 Th' ethereal people ran, to hear and know
 How all befel: they tow'ards the throne supreme
 Accountable made haste, to make appear
 With righteous plea their utmost vigilance; 30
 And easily approv'd: when the Most High
 Eternal Father, from his secret cloud,
 Amidst in thunder utter'd thus his voice.

Assembled Angels, and ye pow'rs return'd
 For unsuccessful charge, be not dismay'd, 35
 Nor troubled at these tidings from the earth,
 Which your sincerest care could not prevent,

told so lately what would come to pass.
 In first this tempter cross'd the gulf from Hell,
 To see then he should prevail and speed
 In bad errand; man should be seduc'd
 Flatter'd out of all, believing lies
 Not his Maker: no decree of mine
 Urring to necessitate his fall,
 Such with lightest moment of impulse
 Free will, to her own inclining left
 Ten scale. But fall'n he is: and now
 Rests, but that the mortal sentence pass
 His transgression, death denounc'd that day?
 Which he presumes already vain and void,
 Use not yet inflict'd, as he fear'd,
 Some immediate stroke; but soon shall find
 Clearance no acquittance ere day end,
 He shall not return as bounty scorn'd.
 Whom send I to judge them? whom but thee
 My dearer Son? to thee I have transferr'd
 Judgment, whether in heav'n, or earth, or hell.
 It may be seen that I intend
 My colleague with justice, sending thee,
 My friend, his Mediator, his design'd
 My ransom and Redeemer voluntary,
 My destin'd man himself to judge man fall'n.
 I spake the Father, and unfolding bright
 My right hand his glory, on the Son
 I set forth unclouded deity: he full
 Resplendent all his Father manifest
 Resolv'd, and thus divinely answer'd mild.
 Father eternal, thine is to decree;
 Both in heav'n and earth to do thy will
 I come, that thou in me thy Son be lov'd
 'Tis ever rest well pleas'd. I go to judge
 In earth these thy transgressors; but thou know'st,
 Never judg'd, the worst on me must light,
 In time shall be; for so I undertook
 For thee; and not repenting, this obtain
 I fight, that I may mitigate their doom,
 Mine deriv'd; yet I shall temper so
 My cease with mercy, as may illustrate most
 My fully satisfi'd, and thee appease:

Attendance none shall need, nor train, where none 80
 Are to behold the judgment, but the judg'd.
 Those two; the third best absent is condemn'd,
 Convict by flight, and rebel to all law;
 Conviction to the serpent none belongs.

Thus saying, from his radiant seat he rose 85
 Of high collateral glory; him thrones and pow'rs
 Princedoms and dominations ministrant
 Accompanied to heaven-gate, from whence
 Eden and all the coast in prospect lay.
 Down he descended straight; the speed of gods 90
 Time counts not, though with swiftest minutes wing'd.
 Now was the sun in western cadence low
 From noon, and gentle airs due at their hour
 To fan the earth now wak'd, and usher in
 The ev'ning cool; when he, from wrath more cool, 95
 Came, the mild judge and intercessor both,
 To sentence man. The voice of God they heard
 Now walking in the garden, by soft winds
 Brought to their ears, while day declin'd they heard,
 And from his presence hid themselves among 100
 The thickest trees, both man and wife; till God
 Approaching, thus to Adam call'd aloud.

Where art thou, Adam, wont with joy to meet
 My coming seen far off! I miss thee here,
 Not pleas'd, thus entertain'd with solitude, 105
 Where obvious duty' erewhile appear'd unfought:
 Or come I less conspicuous, or what change
 Absents thee, or what chance detains? Come forth.

He came, and with him Eve, more loath, tho' first
 T' offend; discount'nanc'd both, and discompos'd:
 Love was not in their looks, either to God 110
 Or to each other; but apparent guilt,
 And shame, and perturbation, and despair,
 Anger, and obstinacy, and hate, and guile.
 Whence Adam falt'ring long, thus answer'd brief. 115
 I heard thee in the gard'n, and of thy voice
 Afraid, being naked, hid myself To whom
 The gracious Judge without revile reply'd.
 My voice thou oft hast heard, and hast not fear'd,
 But still rejoic'd; how is it now become 120
 So dreadful to thee? that thou' art naked, who

Hath told thee? hast thou eaten of the tree
 Whereof I gave thee charge thou should'st not eat?
 To whom thus Adam sore beset reply'd.
 O heav'n! in evil straight this day I stand 125
 Before my Judge, either to undergo
 Myself the total crime, or to accuse
 My other self, the partner of my life;
 Whose failing while her faith to me remains,
 I should conceal, and not expose to blame 130
 By my complaint: but strict necessity
 Subdues me, and calamitous constraint,
 Lest on my head both sin and punishment,
 However insupportable, be all
 Devolv'd; tho' should I hold my peace, yet thou 135
 Would'st easily detect what I conceal;
 This woman, whom thou mad'st to be my help,
 And gav'st me as thy perfect gift, so good,
 So fit, so acceptable, so divine,
 That from her hand I could suspect no ill; 140
 And what she did, whatever in itself,
 Her doing seem'd to justify the deed;
 She gave me of the tree, and I did eat.
 To whom the Sov'reign Presence thus reply'd.
 Was she thy God, that her thou did'st obey 145
 Before his voice? or was she made thy guide,
 Superior, or but equal, that to her
 Thou did'st resign thy manhood, and the place
 Wherein God set thee' above her, made of thee,
 And for thee, whose perfection far excell'd 150
 Her's in all real dignity? Adorn'd
 She was indeed, and lovely to attract
 Thy love, not thy subjection; and her gifts
 Were such as under government well seem'd,
 Unseemly to bear rule; which was thy part 155
 And person, had'st thou known thyself aright.
 So having said, he thus to Eve in few
 Say, woman, what is this which thou hast done?
 To whom sad Eve with shame nigh overwhelm'd,
 Confessing soon, yet not before her Judge 160
 Bold or loquacious, thus abash'd reply'd.
 The serpent me beguil'd, and I did eat.

Which when the LORD GOD heard, without delay
 To judgement he proceeded on th' accus'd
 Serpent, tho' brute, unable to transfer 165
 The guilt on him who made him instrument
 Of mischief, and polluted from the end
 Of his creation; justly then accurs'd,
 As vitiated in nature: more to know
 Concern'd not man, (since he no further knew), 170
 Nor alter'd his offence; yet GOD at last
 To Satan first in sin his doom apply'd,
 Though in mysterious terms, judg'd as then best:
 And on the serpent thus his curse let fall.
 Because thou hast done this, thou art accurs'd 175
 Above all cattle, each beast of the field;
 Upon thy belly grovelling thou shalt go,
 And dust shalt eat all the days of thy life.
 Between thee and the woman I will put
 Enmity, and between thine and her seed; 180
 Her seed shall bruise thy head, thou bruise his heel.

So spake this oracle, then verify'd
 When JESUS son of Mary, second Eve,
 Saw Satan fall like lightning down from heav'n,
 Prince of the air; then rising from his grave 185
 Spoil'd principalities and pow'rs, triumph'd
 In open shew, and with ascension bright
 Captivity led captive through the air,
 'The realm itself of Satan long usurp'd:
 Whom he shall tread at last under our feet; 190
 Ev'n he who now foretold his fatal bruise,
 And to the woman thus his sentence turn'd.
 Thy sorrow I will greatly multiply
 By thy conception; children thou shalt bring
 In sorrow forth; and to thy husband's will 195
 'Thine shall submit; he over thee shall rule.

On Adam last thus judgement he pronounc'd,
 Because thou hast hearken'd to the voice of thy wife,
 And eaten of the tree, concerning which
 I charg'd thee, saying, thou shalt not eat thereof: 200
 Curs'd is the ground for thy sake; thou in sorrow
 Shalt eat thereof all the days of thy life;
 'Thorns also and thistles it shall bring thee forth
 Unbid, and thou shalt eat th' herb of the field.

e sweet of thy face shalt thou eat bread, 205
 thou return unto the ground ; for thou
 of the ground wast taken, know thy birth,
 ust thou art, and shalt to dust return.
 judg'd the man, both judge and saviour sent :
 ih' instant stroke of death denounc'd that day 210
 ov'd far off ; then pitying how they stood
 e him naked to the air, that now
 suffer change, disdain'd not to begin
 eforth the form of servant to assume ;
 hen he wash'd his servant's feet, so now, 215
 ther of his family, he clad
 ' nakedness with skins of beasts, or slain,
 : the snake with youthful coat repaid
 thought not much to clothe his enemies ;
 e their outward only with the skins 220
 asts, but inward nakedness, much more
 obvious, with his robe of righteousness,
 ying cover'd from his Father's sight.
 m with swift ascent he up return'd,
 is blissful bosom reassum'd 225
 dry as of old ; to him appear'd,
 hough all knowing, what had pass'd with man
 anted, mixing intercession sweet.
 an while, ere thus was sinn'd and judg'd on earth,
 in the gates of hell sat Sin and Death, 230
 anterview within the gates, that now
 open wide, belching outrageous flame
 to Chaos, since the fiend pass'd through,
 y'ning, who thus now to Death began.
 son, why sit we here each other viewing 235
 while Satan, our great author thrives
 ref worlds, and happier seat provides
 s, his offspring dear. It cannot be
 at success attends him ; if mishap,
 his he had return'd, with fury driv'n 240
 s avengers ; since no place like this
 it his punishment, or their revenge.
 inks I feel new strength within me rise,
 s growing, and dominion giv'n me large
 ad this deep ; whatever draws me on, 245

Or sympathy, or some connat'ral force,
 Pow'rful at greatest distance to unite,
 With secret amity, things of like kind,
 By secretest conveyance. Thou, my shade
 Inseparable, mult with me along: 150

For Death from Sin no pow'r can separate.
 But lest the difficulty of passing back
 Stay his return perhaps over this gulf
 Impassable, impervious, let us try
 Advent'rous work, yet to thy pow'r and mine 155
 Not unagreeable, to found a path

Over this main from hell to that new world
 Where Satan now prevails; a monument
 Of merit high to all th' infernal host,
 Easing their passage hence, for intercourse, 160
 Or transmigration, as their lot shall lead.
 Nor can I miss the way, so strongly drawn
 By this new felt attraction and instinct.

Whom thus the meagre shadow answer'd soon,
 Go whither fate and inclination strong 165
 Lead thee; I shall not lag behind, nor err
 The way, thou leading; such a scent I draw
 Of carnage, prey innumerable, and taste
 The flavour of death from all things there that live;
 Nor shall I to the work thou enterprisest 170
 Be wanting, but afford thee equal aid.

So saying, with delight he snuff'd the smell
 Of mortal change on earth. As when a flock
 Of ravenous fowl, though many a league remote,
 Against the day of battle, to a field, 175
 Where armies lie encamp'd, come flying lur'd
 With scent of living carcases design'd
 For death, the following day, in bloody fight:
 So scented the grim feature, and upturn'd
 His nostril wide into the mirky air, 180
 Sagacious of his quarry from so far.

Then both from out hell gates, into the waste
 Wide anarchy of Chaos, damp and dark,
 Flew diverse: and with pow'r (their pow'r was great)
 Hov'ring upon the waters, what they met 185
 Solid or slimy, as in raging sea
 Toft up and down, together crowded drove,

each side shoaling tow'ards the mouth of hell ;
 then two polar winds, blowing adverse
 the Cronian sea, together drive 290
 chains of ice, that stop th' imagin'd way
 and Petfora eastward, to the rich
 Asian coast. The aggregated foil,
 which with his mace petrific, cold and dry,
 with a trident smote, and fix'd as firm 295
 Delos floating once ; the rest his look
 and with Gorgonian rigour not to move ;
 with Asphaltic slime, broad as the gate,
 to the roots of hell the gather'd beach
 fasten'd, and the mole immense wrought on, 300
 the foaming deep high arch'd ; a bridge
 of length prodigious, joining to the wall
 inviolable of this new fenceless world
 the way to Death ; from hence a passage broad,
 both, easy, inoffensive, down to hell. 305
 Of great things to small may be compar'd,
 as the liberty of Greece to yoke,
 as Sufa his Memnonian palace high
 as to the sea, and over Hellespont
 crossing his way, Europe with Asia join'd, 310
 scourg'd with many a stroke th' indignant waves.
 had they brought the work by wondrous art
 artificial, a ridge of pendant rock,
 the vex'd abyss, following the track
 of Titan, to the self same place where he 315
 alighted from his wing, and landed safe
 out of Chaos, to the outside bare
 of his round world : with pins of adamant,
 chains, they made all fast ; too fast they made,
 durable ; and now in little space 320
 confines met of empyrean heav'n,
 of this world, and on the left hand hell
 a long reach interpos'd ; three sev'ral ways
 led, to each of these three places led.
 now their way to earth they had descry'd, 325
 of Paradise first tending, when behold
 in likeness of an Angel bright,
 next the Centaur and the Scorpion steering
 with, while the sun in Aries rose :

Disguis'd he came ; but those his children dear 330
 Their parent soon discern'd, though in disguise.
 He, after Eve seduc'd, unminded slunk
 Into the wood fast by, and changing shape
 T' observe the sequel, saw his guileful act
 By Eve, though all unweeting, seconded 335
 Upon her husband ; saw their shame that fought
 Vain overtures : but when he saw descend
 The Son of God to judge them, terrify'd
 He fled not hoping to escape, but shun
 The present, fearing guilty what his wrath 340
 Might suddenly inflict ; that pass'd, return'd
 By night, and list'ning where the hapless pair
 Sat in their sad discourse, and various plaint,
 'Thence gather'd his own doom ; which understood
 Not instant, but of future time, with joy 345
 And tidings fraught, to Hell he now return'd ;
 And at the brink of Chaos, near the foot
 Of this new wondrous pontifice, unhop'd
 Met, who to meet him came, his offspring dear.
 Great joy was at their meeting, and at sight 350
 Of that stupendous bridge his joy increas'd.
 Long he admiring stood, till Sin, his fair
 Enchanting daughter, thus the silence broke.
 O parent, these are thy magnificent deeds,
 Thy trophies, which thou view'st as not thine own ;
 Thou art their author and prime architect : 355
 For I no sooner in my heart divin'd,
 My heart, which by a secret harmony
 Still moves with thine, join'd in connexion sweet,
 That thou on earth had'st prosper'd, which thy looks
 Now also evidence, but straight I felt, 360
 Though distant from thee, worlds between, yet felt
 That I must after thee with this thy son ;
 Such fatal consequence unites us three.
 Hell could no longer hold us in her bounds, 365
 Nor this unvoyageable gulf obscure
 Detain from following thy illustrious tract.
 Thou hast achiev'd our liberty, confin'd
 Within hell-gates till now ; thus us impower'd
 To fortify thus far, and overlay 370
 With this portentous bridge the dark abyss.

now is all this world; thy virtue' hath won
 by hands builded not, thy wisdom gain'd
 Jds what war hath lost, and fully' aveng'd
 l in Heav'n; here thou shalt monarch reign,
 did'st not: there let him still victor sway 376
 the hath adjudg'd, from this new world
 g by his own doom alienated,
 nceforth monarchy with thee divide
 hings parted by th' empyreal bounds 380
 adrature, from thy orbicular world,
 thee now more dang'rous to his throne.
 m thus the prince of darkness answer'd glad.
 ighter, and thou son and grandchild both,
 roof ye now have giv'n to be the race 385
 an; (for I glory in the name,
 onist of Heav'n's Almighty king),
 have merited of me, of all
 fernal empire, that so near heav'n's door
 phal with triumphal act have met, 390
 ith this glorious work, and made one realm
 id this world, one realm, one continent
 thorough-fare. Therefore while I
 d through darkness, on your road with ease,
 affociate pow'rs, them to acquaint 395
 hese succeses, and with them rejoice;
 o this way, among these num'rous orbs,
 ars, right down to Paradise descend;
 dwell, and reign in blifs; thence on the earth
 ion exercise, and in the air, 400
 on Man, the Lord of all declar'd;
 rft make sure your u--all, and lastly kill.
 stitutes I send ye, and crea-
 otent on earth, of matchless mig-
 ; from me: on your joint vigour now 405
 ld of this new kingdom all depends,
 gh sin to death expos'd by my exploit.
 r joint pow'r prevail, th' affairs of hell
 triment need fear; go, and be strong.
 saying he dismiss'd them; they with speed 410
 course through thickest constellations held.
 ding their bane; the blasted stars look'd wan,
 lanets, planet-struck, real eclipse

Then suffer'd. Th' other way Satan went down
 The caufey to hell gate ; on either fide 415
 Disparted Chaos over-built exclaim'd,
 And with rebounding furge the bars affail'd,
 That fcorn'd his indignation : through the gate,
 Wide open and unguarded, Satan pafs'd,
 And all about found defolate, for thofe 420
 Appointed to fit there had left their charge,
 Flown to the upper world ; the reft were all
 Far to th' inland retir'd about the walls
 Of Pandemonium, city, and proud feat
 Of Lucifer, fo by allufion call'd, 425
 Of that bright ftar to Satan paragon'd.
 There kept their watch the legions, while the grand
 In council fat, folicitous what chance
 Might intercept their emp'ror fent ; fo he
 Departing gave command, and they observ'd. 430
 As when the Tartar from his Ruffian foe,
 By Afracan, over the fnowy plains,
 Retires ; or Bactrian Sophi from the horns
 Of Turkish crefcent, leaves all wafte beyond
 The realm of Aladale, in his retreat 435
 To Tauris of Cafbeen : fo thefe, the late
 Heav'n-banifh'd hoft, left thefe utmoft hell
 Many a dark league, reduc'd in careful watch
 Round their metropolis, and now expecting
 Each hour their great advent'rer from the fearch 440
 Of foreign worlds. He through the midft unmark'd,
 In fhow plebeian Angel militant
 Of loweft order, pafs'd ; and from the door
 Of that Plutonian hall, invifible
 Afcended the high throne, which under ftate 445
 Of richeft texture fpread, at th' upper end
 Was plac'd, and regal luftre. Down a while
 He ftood round about him faw unfeen :
 And fift, as from a cloud, his fulgent head
 And fhape ftar bright appear'd, or brighter, clad 450
 With what permiifive glory fince his fall
 Was left him, or falfe glitter. All amaz'd
 At that fo fudden blaze, the Stygian throng
 Bent their afpect ; and whom they wifh'd beheld
 Their mighty chief return'd : loud was th' acclaim :

ush'd in haste the great consulting peers 456
 from their dark divan, and with like joy
 tulant approach'u him, who with hand
 , and with these words attention won.
 mes, dominations, princedoms, virtues, pow'rs,
 possession such, not only' of right 461
 e and declare ye now, return'd
 ful beyond hope, to lead ye forth
 phant out of this infernal pit
 nable, accurs'd, the house of woe, 465
 ngeon of our tyrant: now possess,
 ls, a spacious world, t' our native heav'n
 nferior, by my adventure hard
 eril great atchiev'd. Long were to tell
 I have done, what suffer'd, with what pain 470
 d th' unreal vast, unbounded deep
 rible confusion, over which
 and Death a broad way now is pav'd
 :dite your glorious march; but I
 out my uncouth passage, forc'd to ride 475
 tractable abyss, plung'd in the womb
 riginal Night and Chaos wild,
 ealous of their secrets, fiercely' oppos'd
 rney strange, with clamorous uproar
 ing fate supreme; thence how I found 480
 w-created world, which fame in heav'n
 ad foretold; a fabric wonderful
 lute perfection, therein man
 in a Paradise, by our exile
 appy; him by fraud I have seduc'd 485
 is Creator, and, the more t' increase
 rondet, with an apple; he thereat
 ed, woth your laughter, hath giv'n up
 is beloved man and all his world,
 and Death a prey, and so to us, 490
 at our hazard, labour, or alarm,
 ge in, and to dwell, and over man
 s, as over all he should have rul'd.
 s, me also he hath judg'd, or rather
 s, but the brute serpent, in whose shape 495
 deceiv'd: that which to me belongs
 ity, which he will put between

Me and mankind : I am to bruise his heel ;
 His feed, when is not set, shall bruise my head :
 A world who would not purchase with a bruise, 500
 Or much more grievous pain ? Ye have th' account
 Of my performance : what remains, ye gods,
 But up, and enter now into full blifs ?
 So having said, a while he stood, expecting
 Their universal shout and high applause 505
 To fill his ears ; when contrary, he hears
 On all sides, from innumerable tongues,
 A dismal universal hiss, the sound
 Of public scorn ; he wonder'd, but not long
 Had leisure, wond'ring at himself now more ; 510
 His visage drawn he felt to sharp and spare,
 His arms clung to his ribs, his legs intertwining
 Each other, till supplanted, down he fell
 A monstrous serpent on his belly prone,
 Reluctant ; but in vain, a greater pow'r 515
 Now rul'd him, punish'd in the shape he sinn'd,
 According to his doom : he would have spoke,
 But hiss for hiss return'd with forked tongue
 To forked tongue ; for now were all transform'd
 Alike, to serpents all, as accessories 520
 To his bold riot : dreadful was the din
 Of hissing through the hall, thick swarming now
 With complicated monsters head and tail ;
 Scorpion, and Asp, and Amphibæna dire,
 Ceraftes horn'd, Hydrus, and Elops drear, 525
 And Dipfas, (not so thick swarm'd once the soil
 Bedropt with blood of Gorgon, or the isle
 Ophiusa) : but still greatest he the midst,
 Now dragon grown, larger than whom the sun
 Ingender'd in the Pythian vale on slime. 530
 Huge Python, and his pow'r no less he seem'd
 Above the rest still to retain : they all
 Him follow'd issuing forth to th' open field,
 Where all yet left of that revolted rout
 Heav'n fall'n, in station stood or just array, 535
 Sublime with expectation when to see
 In triumph issuing forth their glorious chief :
 They saw, but other sight instead, a crowd
 Of ugly serpents ; horror on them fell,

horrid sympathy; for what they saw, 540
 felt themselves now changing; down their arms,
 fell both spear and shield, down they as fast,
 the dire hiss renew'd, and the dire form
 'd by contagion; like in punishment,
 their crime. Thus was th' applause they meant
 'd to exploding hiss, triumph to shame 546
 in themselves from their own mouths. There stood
 Eve hard by, sprung up with this their change,
 will who reigns above, to aggravate
 penance, laden with fair fruit, like that 550
 which grew in Paradise, the bait of Eve
 by the tempter: on that prospect strange
 earnest eyes they fix'd, imagining
 the forbidden tree a multitude
 ris'n, to work them further woe or shame; 555
 parch'd with scalding thirst and hunger fierce,
 though to delude them sent, could not abstain;
 when they roll'd in heaps, and up the trees
 rolling, sat thicker than the snaky locks
 curl'd Mezerai: greedily they pluck'd 560
 the fruitage fair to sight, like that which grew
 that bituminous lake where Sodom flam'd:
 more delusive, not the touch, but taste
 'd; they fondly thinking to allay
 their appetite with gust, instead of fruit 565
 'd bitter ashes, which th' offended taste
 spatt'ring noise rejected: oft they essay'd
 to quench their thirst constringing, drug'd as oft,
 the most hatefullest disrelish writh'd their jaws
 with soot and cinder fill'd: so oft they fell 570
 under the same illusion, not as man, [plagu'd
 when they triumph'd once laps'd. Thus were they
 worn with famine, long and ceaseless hiss,
 their lost shape, permitted, they resum'd;
 they injoin'd, some say, to undergo 575
 an annual humbling certain number days,
 to punish their pride, and joy for man seduc'd.
 However, some tradition they dispers'd
 saying the Heathen of their purchase got,
 fabled how the serpent, whom they call'd 580

Ophion with Eurynome, the wide
 Encroaching Eve, perhaps, had first the rule
 Of High Olympus, thence by Satan driv'n
 And Ops, ere yet Dictæan Jove was born.

Mean while in Paradise the hellish pair 585
 Too soon arriv'd. Sin there in pow'r before,
 Once actual, now in body, and to dwell
 Habitual habitant; beheld her Death

Close following pace for pace, not mounted yet
 On his pale horse: to whom Sin thus began. 590

Second of Satan sprung, all-conqu'ring Death,
 What think'st thou of our empire now, though earn'd
 With travel difficult; not better far

Than still at hell's dark threshold t' have sat watch,
 Unnam'd, undreaded, and thyself half-starv'd? 595

Whom thus the Sin-born monster answer'd soon.

To me, who with eternal famine pine,

Alike is Hell, or Paradise, or Heav'n.

There best, where most with ravin I may meet;

Which here, though plenteous, all too little seems 600
 To stuff this maw, this vast unhide-bound corps.

To whom th' incestuous mother thus reply'd.

Thou therefore on these herbs, and fruits, and flow'rs

Feed first; on each beast next, and fish; and fowl,

No homely morsels; and what other thing 605

The scythe of Time mows down, devour unsparr'd;

Till I in man residing, through the race,

His thoughts, his looks, words, actions, all infect,

And season him thy last and sweetest prey.

This said, they both betook them several ways, 610

Both to destroy, or unimmortal make

All kinds, and for destruction to mature

Sooner or later: which th' Almighty seeing,

From his transcendent seat the saints among,

To those bright orders utter'd thus his voice. 615

See with what heat these dogs of hell advance

To waste and havock yonder world, which I

So fair and good created, and had still

Kept in that state, had not the folly of man

Let in these wasteful furies; who impute

Folly to me; so doth the prince of hell, 620

his adherents, that with so much ease
 er'd them to enter and possess
 ace so heav'nly, and conniving seem
 ratify my scornful enemies, 625
 laugh, as if transported with some fit
 affion, I to them had quitted all,
 andom yielded up to their misrule ;
 know not that I call'd and drew them thither,
 ell hounds, to lick up the draff and filth 630
 ch man's polluting sin with taint hath shed
 hat was pure, till cramm'd and gorg'd, nigh burst
 suck'd and glutted offal, at one sling
 y victorious arm, well pleasing Son,
 Sin, and Death, and yawning Grave at last 635
 ough Chaos hurl'd, obstruct the mouth of Hell
 ever, and seal up his rav'nous jaws
 heav'n and earth renew'd shall be made pure
 anctify that shall receive no stain :
 then the curse pronounc'd on both precedes. 640
 e ended, and the heav'nly audience loud
 ; Halleluiah, as the sound of seas,
 ough multitude that sung : Just are thy ways,
 teous are thy decrees on all thy works ;
 can extenuate thee ? Next, to the Son, 645
 in'd Restorer of mankind ; by whom
 heav'n and earth shall to the ages rise,
 own from heav'n descend. Such was the song ;
 le the Creator calling forth by name
 mighty Angels, gave them several charge, 650
 orted best with present things. The sun
 first his precept so to move, so shine,
 night affect the earth with cold and heat
 ce tolerable ; and from the north to call
 epit winter ; from the south to bring 655
 itial summer's heat. To the blank moon
 office they prescrib'd ; to th' other five,
 r planetary motions and aspects,
 xtile, square, and trine, and opposite
 oxious efficacy, and when to join 660
 nod unbenign ; and taught the fix'd
 r influence malignant when to show'r ;

Which of them rising with the sun, or falling,
 Should prove tempestuous : to the winds they set
 Their corners, when with bluster to confound 665
 Sea, air, and shore, the thunder when to roll
 With terror through the dark aerial hall.
 Some say he bid his Angels turn askaunce
 The poles of earth twice ten degrees and more
 From the sun's axle ; they with labour push'd 670
 Oblique the centric globe : some say the sun
 Was bid turn reins from th' equinoctial road
 Like distant breadth to Taurus with the sev'n
 Atlantic Sisters, and the Spartan Twins,
 Up to the Tropic Crab ; thence down amain 675
 By Leo, and the Virgin, and the Scales,
 As deep as Capricorn, to bring in change
 Of seasons to each clime ; else had the spring
 Perpetual smil'd on earth with vernal flow'rs,
 Equal in days and nights, except to those 680
 Beyond the polar circles ; to them day
 Had unbenighted shone, while the low sun
 To recompense his distance, in their sight
 Had rounded still th' horizon, and not known
 Or east or west, which had forbid the snow 685
 From cold Estotiland, and south as far
 Beneath Magellan. At that tasted fruit
 The sun, as from Thyestean banquet, turn'd
 His course intended ; else how had the world
 Inhabited, tho' sinless, more than now, 690
 Avoided pinching cold and scorching heat ?
 These changes in the heav'ns, tho' slow, produc'd
 Like change on sea and land, fideral blast,
 Vapour, and mist, and exhalation hot,
 Corrupt and pestilent : now from the north 695
 Of Norumbega, and the Samoed shore,
 Bursting their brazen dungeon, arm'd with ice,
 And snow, and hail, and stormy gust and flaw,
 Boreas, and Cæcias, and Argestes loud,
 And Thracias, rend the woods, and seas upturn ; 700
 With adverse blast upturns them from the south
 Notus and Afer black with thundrous clouds
 From Serrationa ; thwart of these as fierce

rush the Levant and the Ponent winds,
 and Zephyr, with their lateral noise, 705
 o, and Libeccchio. Thus began
 ge from lifeless things: but Discord first,
 hter of Sin among th' irrational
 introduc'd, through fierce antipathy:
 now with beast 'gan war, and fowl with fowl,
 ish with fish; to graze the herb all leaving, 711
 r'd each other; nor stood much in awe
 in, but fled him, or with count'nance grim
 l on him passing. These were from without
 rowing miseries, which Adam saw 715
 dy' in part, though hid in gloomiest shades,
 row' abandon'd; but worse felt within,
 n a troubled sea of passion tost,
 to disburden sought with sad complaint.
 niferable of happy! is this th' end 720
 is new glorious world, and me so late
 lory of that glory, who now become
 s'd of blessed? hide me from the face
 od, whom to behold was then my height
 ppiness! yet well, if here would end 725
 nifery; I deserv'd it, and would bear
 vn deservings; but this will not serve;
 at I eat or drink, or shall beget,
 pagated curse. O voice once heard
 htfully, *Increase and multiply,* 730
 death to hear! for what can I increase
 ultiply but curses on my head?
 of all ages to succeed, but feeling
 vil on him brought by me, will curse
 :ad? Ill fare our ancestor impure; 735
 is we may thank Adam: but his thanks
 be the execration: so besides
 own that bide upon me, all from me
 with a fierce reflux on me redound,
 e as on their natural center light 740
 y, though in their place. O fl:eting joys
 radise, dear bought with lasting woes!
 request thee, Maker, from my clay
 ould me Man? did I solicit thee

From darknes to promote me, or here place 745
 In this delicious garden? As my will
 Concurr'd not to my be'ing, it were but right
 And equal to reduce me to my dust,
 Desirous to resign and render back
 All I receiv'd, unable to perform 750
 Thy terms too hard, by which I was to hold
 The good I fought not. To the loss of that,
 Sufficient penalty, why hast thou added
 The sense of endless woes? inexplicable
 Thy justice seems; yet to say truth, too late 755
 I thus contest; then should have been refus'd
 Those terms whatever, when they were propos'd:
 Thou did'st accept them; wilt thou enjoy the good,
 Then cavil the conditions? And though God
 Made thee without thy leave, what if thy son 760
 Prove disobedient, and reprov'd, retort,
 Wherefore did'st thou beget me? I fought it not:
 Would'st thou admit for his contempt of thee
 That proud excuse? Yet him not thy election,
 But natural necessity, begot. 765
 God made thee' of choice his own, and of his own
 To serve him; thy reward was of his grace;
 Thy punishment then justly' is at his will.
 Be' it so, for I submit; his doom is fair,
 That dust I am, and shall to dust return. 770
 O welcome hour whenever! why delays
 His hand to execute what his decree
 Fix'd on this day? why do I overlive?
 Why am I mock'd with death, and lengthen'd out
 To deathless pain? how gladly would I meet 775
 Mortality my sentence, and be earth
 Insensibly? how glad would lay me down
 As in my mother's lap? there I should rest
 And sleep secure; his dreadful voice no more
 Would thunder in my ear; no fear of worse 780
 To me and to my offspring would torment me
 With cruel expectation. Yet one doubt
 Pursues me still, lest all I cannot die;
 Lest that pure breath of life, the sp'rit of man,
 Which God inspir'd, cannot together perish 785

L. PARADISE LOST. 139

is corporeal clod ; then in the grave,
 some other dismal place, who knows
 shall die a living death ? O thought
 if true ! yet why ? it was but breath
 that firm'd : what dies but what had life 790
 ? the body properly had neither.
 none then shall die ; let this appease
 doubt, since human reach no further knows.
 though the Lord of all be infinite,
 man also ? be it, Man is not so, 795
 mortal doom'd. How can he exercise
 without end on Man, whom death must end ?
 make deathless death ? that were to make
 contradiction, which to God himself
 is held, as argument 800
 of weakness not of power. Will he draw out,
 for our sake, finite to infinite
 stretch'd man, to satisfy his rigour
 and never ? that were to extend
 his sentence beyond dust, and nature's law, 805
 which all causes else according still
 receive in reception of their matter act,
 within their own extent of their own sphere. But say
 that hath not one stroke, as I supposed,
 no sense, but endless misery 810
 this day onward, which I feel begun
 within me, and without me, and so last
 eternity : Ay me, that fear
 shall send me back with dreadful revolution
 to senseless head ; both Death and I 815
 shall be made one, and incorporate both ;
 in my part single, in me all
 shall stand curs'd : fair patrimony
 must leave ye, sons ; O were I able
 to divide in all myself, and leave ye none ! 820
 I have inherited, how would ye bliss
 escape your curse ! Ah, why should all mankind
 for one man's fault thus guiltless be condemn'd,
 and I alone ? But from me what can proceed,
 corrupt, both mind and will deprav'd, 825
 to do only, but to will the same

With me? how can they then acquitted stand
 In sight of God? Him after all disputes
 Forc'd I absolve: all my evasion vain,
 And reas'nings, though through mazes, lead me still
 But to my own conviction: first and last 831
 On me, me only, as the source and spring
 Of all corruption, all the blame lights due;
 So might the wrath. Fond wish! could thou support
 That burden heavier than the earth to bear, 835
 Than all the world much heavier, though divide
 With that bad woman? Thus what thou desir'st,
 And what thou fear'st, alike destroys all hope
 Of refuge, and concludes thee miserable
 Beyond all past example and future, 840
 To Satan only like both crime and doom.
 O conscience, into what abyss of fears
 And horrors hast thou driv'n me! out of which
 I find no way, from deep to deeper plung'd!
 Thus Adam to himself lamented loud 845
 Through the still night; not now, as ere man fell,
 Wholesome and cool, and mild, but with black air
 Accompanied, with damps and dreadful gloom,
 Which to his evil conscience represented
 All things with double terror: on the ground 850
 Outstretch'd he lay, on the cold ground, and oft
 Curs'd his creation, death as oft accus'd
 Of tardy execution, since denounc'd
 The day of his offence. Why comes not death,
 Said he, with one thrice acceptable stroke 855
 To end me? Shall Truth fail to keep her word,
 Justice divine not hasten to be just?
 But Death comes not at call, Justice divine
 Mends not her slowest pace for pray'rs or cries.
 O woods, O fountains, hillocks, dales, and bow'rs, 860
 With other echo late I taught your shades
 To answer, and resound far other song.
 Whom thus afflicted, when sad Eve beheld,
 Desolate where she sat, approaching nigh,
 Soft words to his fierce passion she assay'd: 865
 But her with stern regard he thus repell'd
 Out of my sight, thou serpent; that name best

; thee with him leagu'd, thyself as false
 hateful ; nothing wants, but that thy shape,
 his, and colour serpentine may show 870
 inward fraud, to warn all creatures from thee
 forth, lest that too heav'nly form pretended,
 ellish falsehood snare them. But for thee
 I persisted happy, had not thy pride
 wand'ring vanity, when least was safe, 875
 ted my forewarning, and disdain'd
 o be trusted ; longing to be seen,
 gh by the dev'il himself, him overweening
 ver-reach ; but with the serpent meeting,
 d and beguil'd ; by him thou, I by thee, 880
 uft thee from my side, imagin'd wise,
 ant, mature, proof against all assaults ;
 understood not all was but a show,
 r than solid virtue' ; all but a rib,
 ced by nature, bent, as now appears, 885
 to the part sinister, from me drawn,
 if thrown out, as supernumerary
 y just number found. O why did God,
 or wise, that peopled highest Heav'n
 spirits masculine, create at last 890
 novelty on earth, this fair defect
 ture ; and not fill the world at once
 Men as Angels without feminine,
 d some other way to generate
 ind ? This mischief had not then befall'n, 895
 more that shall befall ; innumerable
 chances on earth through female snares,
 trait conjunction with this sex : for either
 ever shall find out fit mate, but such
 me misfortune brings him, or mistake ; 900
 om he wishes most shall seldom gain
 igh her perverseness ; but shall see her gain'd
 ar worse ; or if she love, withheld
 rents ; or his happiest choice too late
 meet, already link'd and wedlock bound 905
 fell adversary's hate or shame ;
 h infinite calamity shall cause
 man life, and household peace confound.

He added not, and from her turn'd ; but Eve
 Not so repuls'd, with tears that ceas'd not flowing, 910
 And tresses all disorder'd, at his feet
 Fell humble, and embracing them, besought
 His peace, and thus proceeded in her plaint.

For sake me not thus, Adam, witness Heav'n
 What love sincere, and rev'rence in my heart 915
 I bear thee, and unweeting have offended,
 Unhappily deceiv'd ; thy suppliant
 I beg, and clasp thy knees ; bereave me not,
 Whereon I live, thy gentle looks, thy aid,
 Thy counsel, in this uttermost distress, 920
 My only strength and stay : forlorn of thee,
 Whither shall I betake me, where subsist ?
 While yet we live, scarce one short hour perhaps,
 Between us two let there be peace, both joining,
 As join'd in injuries, one enmity 925
 Against a foe by doom express assign'd us,
 That cruel serpent. On me exercise not
 Thy hatred for this misery befall'n,
 On me already lost, me than thyself
 More miserable : both have sinn'd, but thou 930
 Against God only, I against God and thee ;
 And to the place of judgement will return,
 There with my cries importune Heav'n, that all
 The sentence from thy head remov'd, may light
 On me, sole cause to thee of all this woe, 935
 Me, me only, just object of his ire.

She ended weeping ; and her lowly plight,
 Immoveable till peace obtain'd from fault
 Acknowledg'd and deplor'd, in Adam wrought
 Commiseration ; soon his heart relented 940
 Tow'ards her, his life so late and sole delight,
 Now at his feet submissive in distress,
 Creature so fair his reconciliation seeking,
 His counsel, whom she had displeas'd, his aid ;
 As one disarm'd, his anger all he lost, 945
 And thus with peaceful words uprais'd her soon.

Unwary, and too desirous, as before,
 So now of what thou know'st not, who desir'st
 The punishment all on thyself ; alas !

thine own first, ill able to sustain 950
 ull wrath, whose thou feel'st as yet least part,
 my displeasure bear'st so ill. If pray'rs
 I alter high decrees, I to that place
 d speed before thee, and be louder heard,
 on my head all might be visited, 955
 frailty and infirmer sex forgiv'n,
 e committed, and by me expos'd.
 ise, let us no more contend, nor blame
 other, blam'd enough elsewhere: but strive
 ices of love, how we may lighten 960
 other's burden in our share of woe;
 this day's death denounc'd, if ought I see
 prove no sudden but a slow-pac'd evil,
 ig day's dying, to augment our pain,
 to our seed (O hapless seed!) deriv'd. 965
 whom thus Eve, recover'ing heart, reply'd.
 n, by sad experiment I know
 little weight my words with thee can find,
 d so erroneous, thence by just event
 d so unfortunate: nevertheless, 970
 r'd by thee, vile as I am, to place
 w acceptance, hopeful to regain
 love, the sole contentment of my heart,
 ig or dying, from thee I will not hide
 thoughts in my unquiet breast are risen 975
 ing to some relief of our extremes,
 id, though sharp and sad, yet tolerable,
 our evils, and of easier choice.
 e of our descent perplex us most,
 h must be born to certain woe, devour'd 980
 Death at last; and miserable it is
 e to others cause of misery,
 own begott'en, and of our loins to bring
 this cursed world a woful race,
 after wretched life must be at last 985
 for so foul a monster; in thy pow'r
 s, yet ere conception, to prevent
 race unblest'd, to be'ing yet unbegot.
 blest thou art, childless remain: so Death
 be deceiv'd his glut, and with us two 690

Be forc'd to satisfy his rav'nous maw.
 But if thou judge it hard and difficult,
 Conversing, looking, loving, to abstain
 From love's due rites, nuptial embraces sweet,
 And with desire to languish without hope, 995
 Before the present object languishing
 With like desire, which would be misery
 And torment less than none of what we dread;
 Then both ourselves and seed at once to free
 From what we fear for both, let us make short, 1000
 Let us seek Death; or he not found, supply
 With our own hands his office on ourselves;
 Why stand we longer shiv'ring under fears,
 That show no end but death, and have the pow'r
 Of many ways to die the shortest chusing, 1005
 Destruction with destruction to destroy?

She ended here, or vehement despair
 Broke off the rest; so much of death her thoughts
 Had entertain'd, as dy'd her cheeks with pale.
 But Adam, with such counsel nothing sway'd, 1010
 To better hopes his more attentive mind
 Lab'ring had rais'd, and thus to Eve reply'd.

Eve, thy contempt of life and pleasure seems
 To argue in thee something more sublime
 And excellent than what thy mind contemns; 1015
 But self-destruction therefore sought, refutes
 That excellence thought in thee, and implies,
 Not thy contempt, but anguish and regret
 For loss of time and pleasure overlov'd.
 Or if thou covet death as utmost end 1020
 Of misery, so thinking to evade
 The penalty pronounc'd, doubt not but God
 Hath wiselier arm'd his vengeful ire than so
 To be forestall'd; much more I fear lest death
 So snatch'd will not exempt us from the pain 1025
 We are by doom to pay; rather such acts
 Of contumacy will provoke the Highest
 To make death in us live: then let us seek
 Some safer resolution, which methinks
 I have in view, calling to mind with heed 1030
 Part of our sentence, that thy seed shall bruise

The serpent's head ; piteous amends, unless
 Be meant, whom I conjecture, our grand foe
 Satan, who in the serpent hath contriv'd
 Against us this deceit : to crush his head 1035
 Would be revenge indeed ; which will be lost
 By death brought on ourselves, or childless days
 Resolv'd, as thou propofest ; so our foe
 Shall 'scape his punishment ordain'd, and we
 Intead shall double ours upon our heads. 1040
 No more be mention'd then of violence
 Against ourselves, and wilful barrenness,
 That cuts us off from hope, and favours only
 Rancour and pride, impatience and despite,
 Reluctance against God, and his just yoke 1045
 Laid on our necks. Remember with what mild
 And gracious temper he both heard and judg'd,
 Without wrath or reviling : we expected
 Immediate dissolution, which we thought
 Was meant by death that day ; when lo, to thee 1050
 Pains only in child-bearing were foretold,
 And bringing forth, soon recompens'd with joy,
 Fruit of thy womb : on me the curse aslope
 Glanc'd on the ground : with labour I must earn
 My bread : what harm ? Idleness had been worse ; 1055
 My labour will sustain me : and lest cold
 Or heat should injure us, his timely care
 Hath unbefought provided, and his hands
 Cloth'd us unworthy, pitying while he judg'd :
 How much more, if we pray him, will his ear 1060
 Be open and heart to pity' incline,
 And teach us further by what means to shun
 Th' inclement seasons, rain, ice, hail, and snow ?
 Which now the sky with various face begins
 To shew us in this mountain, while the winds' 1065
 Blow moist and keen, thatt'ring the graceful locks,
 Of these fair spreading trees : which bids us seek
 Some better shroud, some better warmth to cherish,
 Our limbs benum'd, ere this diurnal star
 Leave cold the night, how his gather'd beams 1070
 Reflected may with matter fere foment,
 Or by collision of two bodies grind .

The air attrite to fire, as late the clouds
 Jostling or push'd with winds, rude in their shock.
 Time the flant lightning, whose thwart flame driv'n down
 Kindles the gummy bark of fir or pine, 1076
 And send a comfortable heat from far
 Which might supply the sun : such fire to use,
 And what may else be remedy or cure
 To evils which our own misdeeds have wrought, 1080
 He will instruct us praying, and of grace
 Beseeching him, so as we need not fear
 To pass commodiously this life, sustain'd
 By him with many comforts, till we end
 In dust, our final rest and native home. 1085
 What better can we do, than to the place
 Repairing where he judg'd us, prostrate fall
 Before him reverent, and there confess
 Humbly our faults, and pardon beg, with tears
 Wat'ring the ground, and with our sighs the air 1090
 Frequenting, sent from hearts contrite, in sign
 Of sorr'ow unfeign'd, and humiliation meek ?
 Undoubted he will relent, and turn
 From his displeasure ; in whose look serene,
 When angry most he seem'd, and most severe, 1095
 What else but favour, grace, and mercy shone ?
 So spake our father penitent ; nor Eve
 Felt less remorse : they forthwith to the place
 Repairing where he judg'd them, prostrate fell
 Before him reverent, and both confess'd 1100
 Humbly their faults, and pardon begg'd with tears
 Wat'ring the ground, and with their sighs the air
 Frequenting, sent from hearts contrite, in sign
 Of sorr'ow unfeign'd, and humiliation meek.

END OF THE TENTH BOOK.

PARADISE LOST.

B O O K XI.

THE ARGUMENT.

The Son of God presents to his Father the prayers of our first parents now repenting, and intercedes for them: God accepts them, but declares that they must no longer abide in Paradise; sends Michael with a band of Cherubim to dispossess them; but first to reveal to Adam future things: Michael's coming down. Adam shews to Eve certain ominous signs; he discerns Michael's approach, goes out to meet him: the Angel denounces their departure. Eve's lamentation. Adam pleads, but submits: the Angel leads him up to a high hill, and sets before him in vision what shall happen till the flood.

THUS they in lowliest plight repentant stood
Praying; for from the mercy-seat above
Prevenient grace descending had remov'd
The stony from their hearts, and made new flesh
Regenerate grow instead, that sighs now breath'd
Unutterable, which the spirit of pray'r
Inspir'd, and wing'd for Heav'n with speedier flight
Than loudest oratory: yet their port
Not of mean suiters, nor important less
Seem'd their petition, than when th' ancient pair
In fables old, less ancient yet than these,
Deucalion and chaste Pyrrha, to restore
The race of mankind drown'd, before the flurine
Of Themis flood devout. To Heav'n their pray'rs
Flew up nor miss'd the way, by envious winds
Flown vagabond or frustrate: in they pass'd
Dimensionless through heav'nly doors; then clad

With incense, where the golden altar fum'd,
 By their great intercessor, came in sight
 Before the Father's throne: them the glad Son 20
 Presenting, thus to intercede began.

See, Father, what first fruits on earth are sprung
 From thy implanted grace in man, these sighs
 And pray'rs, which in this golden censer mix'd
 With incense, I thy Priest before thee bring; 25
 Fruits of more pleasing favour from thy seed,
 Sown with contrition in his heart, than those
 Which his own hand manuring all the trees
 Of Paradise could have procur'd, ere fall'n
 From innocence. Now therefore bend thine ear 30
 To supplication; hear his sighs, though mute;
 Unskilful with what words to pray, let me
 Interpret for him, me his advocate
 And propitiation: all his works on me,
 Good or not good, ingraft: my merit those 35
 Shall perfect; and for these my death shall pay.
 Accept me, and in me from these receive
 The smell of peace toward mankind; let him live
 Before thee reconcil'd, at least his days
 Number'd, though sad, till death, his doom (which I
 To mitigate thus plead, not to reverse), 41
 To better life shall yield him, where with me
 All my redeem'd may dwell in joy and bliss,
 Made one with me, as I with thee am one

To whom the Father, without cloud, serene: 45
 All thy request for Man, accepted Son,
 Obtain; all thy request was my decree.
 But longer in that Paradise to dwell,
 The law I gave to Nature him forbids:
 Those pure immortal elements, that know 50
 No gross, no unharmonious mixture foul,
 Eject him tainted now, and purge him off
 As a distemper, gross to air as gross,
 And mortal food, as may dispose him best
 For dissolution wrought by sin, that first 55
 Distemper'd all things, and of incorrupt
 Corrupted I at first with two fair gifts
 Created him, endow'd with happiness

immortality . that fondly lost,
 other ferv'd but to eternize woe, 60
 provided death ; so death becomes
 inal remedy, and after life .
 d in sharp tribulation, and refin'd
 uth and faithful works, to second life,
 'd in the renovation of the just, 65
 ns him up with heav'n and earth renew'd.
 et us call to synod all the bleis'd
 ' Heav'n's wide bounds; from them I will not hide
 idgements, how with mankind I proceed,
 ow with peccant Angels late they saw, 70
 in their state, though firm, stood more confin'd.
 : ended, and the Son gave signal high
 ie bright minister that watch'd ; he blew
 rumpet, heard in Oreb since perhaps
 a God descended. and perhaps once more 75
 ound at gen'ral doom. 'Th' angelic blast
 l all the regions : from their blissful bow'rs
 arantine shade, fountain or spring,
 ie waters of life. where'er they sat
 lowships of joy, the sons of light 80
 :d resorting to the summons high,
 took their seats ; till from his throne supreme
 Almighty thus pronounc'd his sov'reign will.
 sons, like one of us man is become
 now both good and evil, since his taste 85
 at defended fruit : but let him boast
 :nowledge of good lost, and evil got ;
 sier, had it suffic'd him to have known
 l by itself, and evil not at all.
 orrows now, repents, and prays contrite ; 90
 notions in him, longer than they move,
 heart I know, how variable and vain
 est. Lest therefore his now bolder hand
 h also of the tree of life and eat,
 live for ever, dream at least to live 95
 ver, to remove him I decree,
 fend him from the garden forth to till
 ground whence he was taken, fitter soil.
 chael, *this my behest have thou in charge ;*

Heart-struck with chilling gripe of sorrow hood,
 That all his senses bound: Eve, who unseen 265
 Yet all had heard, with audible lament
 Discover'd soon the place of her retire.

O unexpected stroke, worse than of death!
 Must I thus leave thee, Paradise? thus leave
 Thee, native soil, these happy walks and shades, 270
 Fit haunt of Gods? where I had hope to spend,
 Quiet, though sad, the respite of that day.

That must be mortal to us both? O flow'rs
 That never will in other climate grow,
 My early visitation, and my last 275

At ev'n, which I bred up with tender hand
 From the first op'ning bud, and gave ye names,
 Who now shall rear ye to the sun, or rank
 Your tribes and water from th' ambrosial fount?
 Thee lastly, nuptial bow'r, by me adorn'd 280

With what to sight or smell was sweet! from thee
 How shall I part, and whither wander down
 Into a lower world, to this obscure
 And wild? how shall we breathe in other air
 Less pure, accusom'd to immortal fruits? 285

Whom thus the Angel interrupted mild:
 Lament not, Eve, but patiently resign
 What justly thou hast lost; nor set thy heart,
 Thus over-fond, on that which is not thine;
 Thy going is not lonely; with thee goes 290
 Thy husband: him to follow thou art bound;
 Where he abides think there thy native soil.

Adam by this from the cold sudden damp
 Recov'ring, and his scatter'd spirits return'd,
 To Michael thus his humble words address'd. 295

Celestial, whether among the Thrones, or nam'd
 Of them the high'est, for such of shape may seem
 Prince above princes, gently thou hast told
 Thy message, which might eise in telling wound,
 And in performing end us; what besides 300
 Of sorrow, and dejection, and despair,
 Our frailty can sustain, thy tidings bring,
 Departure from this happy place, our sweet
 Recess, and only consolation left

XI. PARADISE LOST. 255

liar to our eyes ; all places else 305
 pitable appear and desolate,
 knowing us nor known : and if by pray'r
 tant I could hope to change the will
 m who all things can, I would not cease
 eary him with my assiduous cries : 310
 prayer against his absolute decree
 ore avails than breath against the wind,
 n stifling back on him that breathes it forth :
 efore to his great bidding I submit.
 most afflicts me, that departing hence, 315
 om his face I shall be hid, depriv'd
 lesst count'nance ; here I could frequent
 worship place by place where he vouchsaf'd
 nce divine, and to my sons relate,
 is mount he appear'd, under this tree 320
 I visible, among these pines his voice
 rd, here with him at this fountain talk'd ;
 any grateful altars I would rear
 assy turf, and pile up ev'ry stone
 stre from the brook, in memory, 325
 onument to ages, and thereon
 sweet smelling gums, and fruits, and flow'rs :
 nder nether world, where shall I seek
 ight appearances, or footsteps trace ?
 ough I fled him angry, yet recall'd 330
 fe prolong'd and promis'd race, I now
 ly behold though but his utmost skirts
 ory, and far off his steps adore.
 whom thus Michael, with regard benign.
 n, thou know'st Heav'n his, and all the earth 335
 this rock only ; his omnipresence fills
 l, sea, and air, and ev'ry kind that lives,
 ented by his virtual pow'r and warm'd :
 h' earth he gave thee to possess and rule,
 epicable gift ; surmise not then 340
 ference to these narrow bounds confin'd
 aradise or Eden ; this had been
 aps thy capital seat, from whence had spread
 enerations, and had hither come
 all the ends of th' earth, to celebrate 345

And rev'rence thee their great progenitor.
 But this pre-eminence thou' hast lost, brought down
 To dwell on even ground now with thy sons :
 Yet doubt not but in valley and in plain
 God is as here, and will be found alike 350
 Present, and of his presence many a sign
 Still following thee, still compassing thee round
 With goodness and paternal love, his face
 Expresses, and of his steps the tract divine.
 Which that thou may'st believe, and be confirm'd 355
 Ere thou from hence depart, know I am sent
 To shew thee what shall come in future days
 To thee and to thy offspring good with bad ;
 Expect to hear supernal grace contending
 With sinfulness of men ; thereby to learn 360
 True patience, and to temper joy with fear
 And pious sorrow, equally inur'd
 By moderation either state to bear,
 Prosperous or adverse : so shalt thou lead
 Safest thy life, and best prepar'd endure 365
 Thy mortal passage when it comes. Ascend
 This hill ; let Eve (for I have drench'd her eyes)
 Here sleep below, while thou to foresight wak'st ;
 As once thou slept'st, while she to life was form'd.
 To whom thus Adam gratefully reply'd. 370
 Ascend, I follow thee, safe guide, the path
 Thou lead'st me, and to the hand of Heav'n submit,
 However chast'ning, to the evil turn
 My obvious breast, arming to overcome
 By suff'ring, and earn rest from labour won, 375
 If so I may attain. So both ascend
 In the visions of God. It was a hill
 Of Paradise the highest, from whose top
 The hemisphere of earth in clearest ken
 Stretch'd out to th' amplest reach of prospect lay. 380
 Not higher that hill, nor wider looking round,
 Whereon for diff'rent cause the tempter set
 Our second Adam in the wilderness,
 To shew him all earth's kingdoms, and their glory.
 His eye might there command wherever stood 385
 City of old or modern fame, the seat

Of mightiest empire, from the destin'd walls
 Of Cambula, seat of Cathaian Can,
 And Samarchand by Oxus, Temir's throne,
 To Paquin of Sinzar king, and thence 390
 To Arga and Lahor of great Mogul,
 Down to the golden Chersonese, or where
 The Persian in Ecbatan sat, or since
 In Hispahan, or where the Russian Czar
 In Mosco, or the Sultan in Bizance, 395
 Turcheftan-born; nor could his eye not ken
 Th' empire of Negus to his utmost port
 Ercoco, and the leis maritime kings,
 Mombaza, and Quiloa, and Melind,
 And Sofala thought Ophir, to the realm 400
 Of Congo, and Angola farthest south:
 Or thence from Niger flood to Atlas mount,
 The kingdoms of Almanfor, Fez and Sus,
 Morocco, and Algiers, and Tremisen;
 On Europe thence, and where Rome was to sway 405
 The world: in sp'rit perhaps he also saw
 Rich Mexico, the seat of Montezuma,
 And Cusco in Peru, the richer seat
 Of Atabalipa, and yet unspoil'd
 Guiana, whose great city Geryon's sons 410
 Call El Dorado. But to nobler fights
 Michael from Adam's eyes the film remov'd,
 Which the false fruit that promis'd clearer sight
 Had bred; then purg'd with eupharasy and rue
 The visual nerve, for he had much to see; 415
 And from the well of life three drops instill'd,
 So deep the pow'r of these ingredients pierc'd,
 Ev'n to the inmost seat of mental sight;
 That Adam now inforc'd to close his eyes,
 Sunk down, and all his sp'rits became intranc'd; 420
 But him the gentle Angel by the hand
 Soon rais'd, and his attention thus recall'd.
 Adam, now ope thine eyes, and first behold
 Th' effects which thy original crime hath wrought.
 In some to spring from thee, who never touch'd 425
 Th' accepted tree, nor with the snake conspir'd,
 Nor sinn'd thy sin, yet from that sin derive

Corruption to bring forth more violent deeds.

His eyes he open'd, and beheld a field,
 Part arable and tilth, whereon were sheaves 430
 New reap'd; the other part sheep walks and folds;
 I' th' midst an altar as the land-mark stood,
 Rustic, of grassy fod; thither anon
 A sweaty reaper from his tillage brought
 First fruits, the green ear, and the yellow sheaf, 435
 Uncull'd, as came to hand; a shepherd next,
 More meek, came with the firstling of his flock
 Choicest and best; then sacrificing, laid
 The inwards and their fat, with incense strow'd
 On the cleft wood, and all due rites perform'd. 440
 His off'ring soon propitious fire from Heav'n
 Consum'd with nimble glance, and grateful steam;
 The other's not, for his was not sincere:
 Whereat he inly rag'd, and as they talk'd,
 Smote him into the midriff with a stone 445
 That beat out life: he fell, and deadly pale
 Groan'd out his soul with gushing blood effus'd!
 Much at that sight was Adam in his heart
 Dismay'd, and thus in haste to th' Angel cry'd.
 O teacher, some great mischief hath befall'n 450
 To that meek man, who well had sacrific'd;
 Is piety thus and pure devotion paid?
 T' whom Michael thus, he also mov'd, reply'd.
 These two are brethren. Adam, and to come
 Out of thy loins; th' unjust the just hath slain, 455
 For envy that his brother's off'ring found
 From Heav'n acceptance: but the bloody act
 Will be aveng'd; and th' other's faith approv'd,
 Lose no reward, though here thou see him die,
 Rolling in dust and gore. To which our fire. 460
 Alas, both for the deed and for the cause!
 But have I now seen Death? Is this the way
 I must return to native dust? O sight
 Of terror, foul and ugly to behold,
 Horrid to think, how horrible to feel! 465
 To whom Michael. Death thou hast seen
 In his first shape on man; but many shapes
 Of death, and many are the ways that lead

To his grim cave, all dismal; yet to sense
 More terrible at th' entrance than within. 470
 Some, as thou saw'st, by violent stroke shall die,
 By fire, flood, famine; by intemp'rance more
 In meats and drinks, which on the earth shall bring
 Diseases dire, of which a monstrous crew
 Before thee shall appear; that thou may'st know 475
 What misery th' inabstinence of Eve
 Shall bring on men. Immediately a place
 Before his eyes appear'd, sad, noisome, dark,
 A lazarus-house it seem'd, wherein were laid
 Numbers of all diseas'd, all maladies 480
 Of ghastly spasms, or racking torture, qualms
 Of heart-sick agony, all feverous kind,
 Convulsions, epilepsies, fierce catarrhs,
 Intestine stone and ulcer, colic pangs,
 Demoniac phrenzy, mooping melancholy, 485
 And moon-struck madness, pining atrophy,
 Marasmus, and wide wasting pestilence,
 Dropsies, and asthmas, and joint racking rheums.
 Dire was the tossing, deep the groans; Despair
 Tended the sick, busiest from couch to couch; 490
 And over them triumphant Death his dart
 Shook, but delay'd to strike, though oft invoc'd
 With vows, as their chief good, and final hope.
 Sight so deform what heart of rock could long
 Dry-ey'd behold? Adam could not, but wept, 495
 Though not of woman born: compassion quell'd
 His best of man, and gave him up to tears
 A space, till firmer thoughts restrain'd excess;
 And scarce recover'ing words his plaint renew'd,
 O miserable mankind, to what fall 500
 Degraded, to what wretched state reserv'd!
 Better end here unborn. Why is life giv'n
 To be thus wrested from us? rather why
 Obtruded on us thus? who, if we knew
 What we receive, would rather not accept 505
 Life offer'd, or soon beg to lay it down,
 Glad to be so dismiss'd in peace. Can thus
 Th' image of God in man, created once
 So goodly and erect, though faulty since,

To such unfighly suff'rings be debas'd 510
 Under inhuman pains? Why should not man,
 Retaining still divine similitude
 In part, from such deformities be free,
 And for his Maker's image sake, exempt?
 Their Maker's image, answer'd Michael, then 515
 Forsook them, when themselves they vilify'd
 To serve ungovern'd Appetite, and took
 His image whom they serv'd, a brutish vice,
 Inductive mainly to the sin of Eve.
 Therefore so abject is their punishment, 520
 Disfig'ring not God's likeness, but their own;
 Or if his likeness, by themselves defac'd,
 While they pervert pure nature's healthful rules
 To loathsome sickness; worthily, since they
 God's image did not rev'rence in themselves. 525
 I yield it just, said Adam, and submit.
 But is there yet no other way, besides
 These painful passages, how we may come
 To death, and mix with our co-nat'ral dust?
 There is, said Michael, if thou well observe 530
 The rule of not too much, by temp'rance taught,
 In what thou eat'st and drink'st. seeking from thence
 Due nourishment, not gluttonous delight,
 Till many years over thy head return:
 So may'st thou live, till like ripe fruit thou drop 535
 Into thy mother's lap, or be with ease
 Gather'd, not harshly pluck'd, for death mature:
 This is old age; but then thou must outlive
 Thy youth, thy strength, thy beauty, which will change
 To wither'd, weak, and grey: thy senses then 540
 Obtuse, all taste of pleasures must forego,
 To what thou hast; and for the air of youth,
 Hopeful and chearful, in thy blood will reign
 A melancholy damp of cold and dry
 To weigh thy spirits down, and last consume 545
 The balm of life. To whom our ancestor:
 Henceforth I fly not death, nor would prolong
 Life much; bent rather how I may be quit
 Firest and easiest of this cumbrous charge;
 Which I must keep, till my appointed day 550

Of rend'ring up, and patiently attend
 My dissolution Michael reply'd.
 Nor love thy life, nor hate; but what thou liv'st,
 Live well; how long or short permit to Heav'n:
 And now prepare thee for another fight. 555
 He look'd, and saw a spacious plain, whereon
 Were tents of various hue: by some were herds
 Of cattle grazing; others, whence the sound
 Of instruments that made melodious chime
 Was heard, of harp and organ; and who mov'd 560
 Their stops and chords, was seen; his volant touch
 Instinct through all proportions, low and high,
 Fled, and pursu'd transverse the resonant fugue.
 In other part stood one who at the forge
 Lab'ring, two massy clods of ir'on and brass 565
 Had melted, (whether found where casual fire
 Had walted woods on mountain or in vale,
 Down to the veins of earth, thence gliding hot
 To some cave's mouth, or whether wash'd by stream
 From under ground), the liquid ore he drain'd 570
 Into fit moulds prepar'd; from which he form'd
 First his own tools; then, what might else be wrought
 Fusil or grav'n in metal. After these,
 But on the hither side, a diff'rent fort
 From the high neighb'ring hills, which was their seat,
 Down to the plain descended: by their guise 576
 Just men they seem'd, and all their study bent
 To worship God aright, and know his works
 Not hid, nor those things last which might preserve
 Freedom and peace to men: they on the plain 580
 Long had not walk'd, when from the tents behold
 A bevy of fair women, richly gay
 In gems and wanton dress; to th' harp they sung
 Soft amorous ditties, and in dance came on.
 The men, though grave, ey'd them, and let their eyes
 Rove without rein, till in th' amorous net 586
 First caught, they lik'd, and each his liking chose:
 And now of love they treat, till th' evening star,
 Love's harbinger, appear'd; then all in heat
 They light the nuptial torch, and bid invoke 590
 Hymen, then first to marriage-rites inwolv'd.

With feast and music all the tents resound.

Such happy interview and fair event

Of love and youth not lost, songs, garlands, flow'rs,

And charming-symphonies attach'd the heart 595

Of Adam, soon inclin'd t' admit delight,

The bent of nature; which he thus express'd.

True op'ner of mine eyes, prime Angel blest'd,

Much better seems this vision, and more hope

Of peaceful days portends than those two past: 600

Those were of hate and death, or pain much worse;

Here nature seems fulfill'd in all her ends.

To whom thus Michael. Judge not what is best

By pleasure, though to nature seeming meet,

Created, as thou art, to nobler end, 605

Holy and pure, conformity divine.

Those tents thou saw'st so pleasant, were the tents

Of wickedness, wherein shall dwell his race

Who slew his brother; studious they appear

Of arts that polish life, inventors rare, 610

Unmindful of their Maker, though his Sp'rit

Taught them, but they his gifts acknowledg'd none.

Yet they a beauteous offspring shall beget:

For that fair female troop thou saw'st, that seem'd

Of goddesses, so blithe, so smooth, so gay, 615

Yet empty of all good, wherein consists

Woman's domestic honour and chief praise;

Bred only and completed to the taste

Of lustful appetite, to sing, to dance,

To dress, and troll the tongue, and roll the eye. 620

To these, that sober race of men, whose lives

Religious titled them the sons of God,

Shall yield up all their virtue, all their fame

Ignobly, to the trains and to the smiles

Of these fair atheists, and now swim in joy, 625

Erelong to swim at large; and laugh, for which

The world erelong a world of tears must weep.

To whom thus Adam, of soft joy bereft.

O pity' and shame, that they who to live well,

Enter'd so fair, should turn aside to tread 630

Paths indirect, or in the midway faint!

But still I see the tenor of Man's woe

Holds on the same, from Woman to begin.

From man's effeminate slackness it begins,
Said th' Angel, who would better hold his place 635
By wisdom, and superior gifts receiv'd.
But now prepare thee for another scene.

He look'd, and saw wide territories spread
Before him, towns, and rural works between,
Cities of men with lofty gates and tow'rs ; 640

Concourse in arms, fierce faces threat'ning war,
Giants of mighty bone. and bold emprise :
Part wield their arms, part curb the foaming steed,
Single or in array of battle rang'd
Both horse and foot, nor idly must'ring stood ; 645

One way a band select from forage drives
A herd of beeves, fair oxen and fair kine,
From a fat meadow-ground, or fleecy flock,
Ewes and their bleating lambs, over the plain,
Their booty ; scarce with life the shepherds fly, 650

But call in aid, which makes a bloody fray ;
With cruel tournament the squadrons join ;
Where cattle pastur'd late, now scatter'd lies
With carcases and arms th' insanguin'd field
Deserted : o'ers to a city strong 655

Lay siege, incamp'd, by batt'ry, scale, and mine,
Assaulting ; others from the wall defend
With dart and jav'lin, stones and sulph'rous fire ;
On each hand slaughter and gigantic deeds.
In other parts the scepter'd heralds call 660

To council in the city gates ; anon
Grey-headed men and grave with warriors mix'd
Assemble, and harangues are heard, but soon
In factious opposition : till at last
Of middle age one rising, eminent 665

In wise deport, spake much of right and wrong,
Of justice, of religion, truth and peace,
And judgement from above : him old and young
Exploded, and had seiz'd with violent hands,
Had not a cloud descending snatch'd him thence 670
Unseen amid the throng : so violence

Proceeded, and oppression, and sword-law,
Through all the plain, and refuge none was found.

Adam was all in tears, and to his guide
 Lamenting turn'd full sad; O what are these, 675
 Death's ministers, not men, who thus deal death
 Inhumanly to men, and multiply
 Ten thousandfold the sin of him who slew
 His brother! for of whom such massacre
 Make they but of their brethren, men of men? 680
 But who was that just man, whom had not Heav'n
 Rescu'd, had in his righteousness been lost?
 To whom thus Michael. These are the product
 Of those ill-mated marriages thou saw'st;
 Where good with bad were match'd, who of themselves
 Abhor to join; and by imprudence mix'd, 686
 Produce prodigious births of body' or mind:
 Such were these giants, men of high renown;
 For in those days might only shall be admir'd,
 And valour and heroic virtue call'd; 690
 To overcome in battle, and subdue
 Nations, and bring home spoils with infinite
 Man-slaughter, shall be held the highest pitch
 Of human glory, and for glory done
 Of triumph, to be styl'd great conquerors, 695
 Patrons of mankind, gods, and sons of gods;
 Destroyers rightlier call'd, and plagues of men.
 Thus fame shall be achiev'd, renown on earth,
 And what most merits fame in silence hid.
 But he, the sev'nth from thee, whom thou beheld'st, 700
 The only righteous in a world perverse,
 And therefore hated, therefore so beset
 With foes, for daring single to be just,
 And utter odious truth, that God would come
 To judge them with his saints: him the Most High,
 Rapt in a balmy cloud with winged steeds, 706
 Did, as thou saw'st, receive, to walk with God
 High in salvation, and the climes of bliss,
 Exempt from death; to shew thee what reward
 Awaits the good, the rest what punishment; 710
 Which now directs thine eyes, and soon behold.
 He look'd and saw the face of things quite chang'd:
 The brazen throat of war had ceas'd to roar;
 All now was turn'd to jolly and game,

Book XI. PARADISE LOST. 265

To luxury and riot, feast and dance, 715
 Marrying or prostituting, as besel
 Rape or adultery, where passing fair
 Allur'd them; thence from cups to civil broils.
 At length a rev'rend fire among them came,
 And of their doings great dislike declar'd, 720
 And testify'd against their ways; he oft
 Frequented their assemblies, whereso met,
 Triumphs or festivals, and to them preach'd
 Conversion and repentance, as to souls
 In prison under judgements imminent: 725
 But all in vain; which when he saw, he ceas'd
 Contending, and remov'd his tents far off;
 Then from the mountain hewing timber tall,
 Began to build a vessel of huge bulk: 729
 Measur'd by cubit, length, and breadth, and height;
 Smear'd round with pitch; and in the side a door
 Contriv'd; and of provisions laid in large
 For man and beast: when lo, a wonder strange!
 Of ev'ry beast, and bird, and insect small
 Came sev'ns, and pairs, and enter'd in, as taught 735
 Their order: last the fire, and his three sons,
 With their four wives; and God made fast the door.
 Meanwhile the south-wind rose, and with black wings
 Wide hov'ring, all the clouds together drove
 From under Heav'n; the hills to their supply 740
 Vapour, and exhalation dusk and moist,
 Sent up amain; and now the thicken'd sky
 Like a dark ceiling flood; down rush'd the rain
 Impetuous, and continu'd, till the earth
 No more was seen; the floating vessel swam 745
 Uplifted, and secure with beaked prow
 Rode tilting o'er the waves: all dwelling else
 Flood overwhelm'd, and them with all their pomp
 Deep under water roll'd; sea cover'd sea,
 Sea without shore; and in their palaces 750
 Where luxury late reign'd, sea-monsters whelp'd
 And stabl'd; of mankind, so numerous late,
 All left in one small bottom swam imbarck'd.
 How did'st thou grieve then, Adam, to behold
 The end of all thy offspring, end so sad, 755

Depopulation? thee another flood,
 Of tears and sorrow' a flood, thee also drown'd,
 And sunk thee as thy sons; till gently rear'd
 By th' Angel, on thy feet thou stood'st at last,
 Though comfortless, as when a father mourns 760
 His children, all in view destroy'd at once;
 And scarce to th' Angel utter'd thus thy plaint.
 O visions, ill foreseen! better had I
 Liv'd ignorant of future, so had borne
 My part of evil only, each day's lot 765
 Enough to bear; those now, that were dispens'd
 The burden of many ages, on me light
 At once, by my foreknowledge gaining birth
 Abortive, to torment me ere their being,
 With thought that they must be. Let no man seek 770
 Henceforth to be foretold what shall befall
 Him or his children; evil he may be sure,
 Which neither his foreknowledge can prevent,
 And he the future evil shall no less
 In apprehension than in substance feel, 775
 Grievous to bear: but that care now is past,
 Man is not whom to warn: these few escap'd
 Famine and anguish will at last consume,
 Wand'ring that wat'ry desert. I had hope,
 When violence was ceas'd, and war on earth, 780
 All would have then gone well, peace would have
 With length of happy days the race of man: [crown'd
 But I was far deceiv'd; for now I see
 Peace to corrupt no less than war to waste.
 How comes it thus? unfold, celestial guide, 785
 And whether here the race of man will end.
 To whom thus Michael. Those whom last thou saw'st
 In triumph and luxurious wealth, are they
 First seen in acts of prowess eminent,
 And great exploits, but of true virtue void, 790
 Who having spilt much blood, and done much waste
 Subduing nations, and achiev'd thereby
 Fame in the world, high titles, and rich prey,
 Shall change their course to pleasure, ease, and sloth,
 Surfeit, and lust, till wantonness and pride 795
 Raise out of friendship hostile deeds in peace.

The conquer'd also, and enslav'd by war,
 Shall, with their freedom lost, all virtue lose,
 And fear of God, from whom their piety feign'd
 In sharp contest of battle found no aid, 800
 Against invaders; therefore cool'd in zeal,
 Thenceforth shall practise how to live secure,
 Worldly or dissolute, on what their lords
 Shall leave them to enjoy; for th' earth shall bear
 More than enough, that temp'rance may be try'd: 805
 So all shall turn degen'rate, all deprav'd;
 Justice and temp'rance, truth and faith forgot;
 One man except, the only son of light
 In a dark age, against example good,
 Against allurements, custom, and a world 810
 Offended; fearless of reproach and scorn,
 Or violence, he of their wicked ways
 Shall them admonish, and before them set
 The path of righteousness, how much more safe,
 And full of peace, denouncing wrath to come 815
 On their impenitence; and shall return
 Of them derided, but of God observ'd
 The one just man alive; by his command
 Shall build a wondrous ark, as thou beheld'st,
 To save himself and household from amidst 820
 A world devote to universal wrack.
 No sooner he with them of man and beast
 Select for life, shall in the ark be lodg'd,
 And shelter'd round, but all the cataracts
 Of Heav'n set open on the earth shall pour 825
 Rain day and night; all fountains of the deep
 Broke up, shall heave th' ocean to usurp
 Beyond all bounds, till inundation rise
 Above the highest hills; then shall this mount
 Of Paradise by might of waves be mov'd 830
 Out of his place, push'd by the horned flood,
 With all his verdure spoil'd, and trees adrift,
 Down the great river to th' opening gulph,
 And there take root, an island salt and bare,
 The haunt of seals, and orcs, and sea-mews clang: 835
 To teach thee that God attributes to place
 No sanctity, if none be thither brought

By men who there frequent, or therein dwell.
 And now what further shall ensue, behold.
 He look'd, and saw the ark hull on the flood, 840
 Which now abated : for the clouds were fled,
 Driv'n by a keen north wind, that blowing dry
 Wrinkled the face of deluge. as decay'd ;
 And the clear sun on his wide wat'ry glass
 Gaz'd hot, and of the fresh wave largely drew, 845
 As after thirst, which made their flowing shrink
 From standing lake to tripping ebb, that stole
 With soft foot tow'ards the deep, which now had stop't
 His sluices, as the heav'n his window shut.
 The ark no more now floats, but seems on ground, 850
 Fast on the top of some high mountain fix'd,
 And now the tops of hills as rocks appear ;
 With clamour thence the rapid currents drive
 Tow'ards the retreating sea their furious tide.
 Forthwith from out the ark a raven flies, 855
 And after him, the surer messenger,
 A dove sent forth once and again to spy
 Green tree or ground whereon his foot may light ;
 The second time returning, in his bill
 An olive-leaf he brings, pacific sign : 860
 Anon dry ground appears, and from his ark
 The ancient sire descends with all his train ;
 Then with uplifted hands, and eyes devout,
 Grateful to Heav'n, over his head beholds
 A dewy cloud, and in the cloud a bow, 865
 Conspicuous, with three list'd colours gay,
 Betok'ning peace from God, and cov'nant new.
 Whereat the heart of Adam erst so sad
 Greatly rejoic'd, and thus his joy broke forth.
 O thou who future things can'st represent 870
 As present, heav'nly instructor, I revive
 At this last sight, assur'd that Man shall live
 With all the creatures, and their seed preserve.
 Far less I now lament for one whole world
 Of wicked sons destroy'd, than I rejoice 875
 For one man found so perfect and so just,
 That God vouchsafes to raise another world
 From him, and all his anger to forget ;

But say, what mean those colour'd streaks in Heav'n,
 Distended as the brow of God appears'd? 880
 Or serve they as a flow'ry verge to bind
 The fluid skirts of that same wat'ry cloud,
 Lest it again dissolve, and show'r the earth?
 To whom th' Arch-angel. Dextrously thou aim'st:
 So willingly doth God remit his ire, 885
 'Though late repenting him of man deprav'd,
 Griev'd at his heart when looking down he saw
 The whole earth fill'd with violence, and all flesh
 Corrupting each their way; yet those remov'd,
 Such grace shall one just man find in his sight, 890
 That he relents, not to blot out mankind,
 And makes a cov'nant never to destroy
 The earth again by flood, nor let the sea
 Surpass his bounds, nor rain to drown the world,
 With man therein or beast; but when he brings 895
 Over the earth a cloud, while therein set
 His triple colour'd bow, whereon to look,
 And call to mind his cov'nant: day and night,
 Seed-time and harvest, heat and hoary frost 899
 Shall hold their course, till fire purge all things new,
 Both Heav'n and Earth, wherein the just shall dwell.

END OF THE ELEVENTH BOOK.

PARADISE LOST.

B O O K XII.

THE ARGUMENT.

The Angel Michael continues from the flood to relate what shall succeed; then, in the mention of Abraham, comes by degrees to explain who that seed of the woman shall be, which was promised Adam and Eve in the fall; his incarnation, death, resurrection, and ascension; the state of the church till his second coming. Adam greatly satisfied and recomforted by these relations and promises, descends the hill with Michael; wakens Eve, who all this while had slept, but with gentle dreams compos'd to quietness of mind and submission. Michael in either hand leads them out of Paradise, the fiery sword waving behind them, and the Cherubim taking their stations to guard the place.

AS one who in his journey baits at noon, [paus'd
Though bent on speed: so here th' Arch-angel
Betwixt the world destroy'd and world restor'd,
If Adam ought perhaps might interpose:
Then with transition sweet new speech resumes. 5
Thus thou hast seen one world begin and end;
And man as from a second stock proceed;
Much thou hast yet to see: but I perceive
Thy mortal sight to fail; objects divine
Must needs impair and weary human sense: 10
Henceforth what is to come I will relate.
Thou therefore give due audience, and attend,
This second source of men, while yet but few,
And while the dread of judgement past remains
Fresh in their minds, fearing the Deity, 15
With some regard to what is just and right
Shall lead their lives and multiply apace;

Lab'ring the foil, and reaping plenteous crop,
 Corn, wine, and oil, and from the herd or flock
 Oft sacrificing bullock, lamb, or kid 20
 With large wine-off'rings pour'd, and sacred feast,
 Shall spend their days in Joy unblam'd, and dwell
 Long time in peace, by families and tribes,
 Under paternal rule ; till one shall rise
 Of proud ambitious heart, who, not content 25
 With fair equality, fraternal taste,
 Will arrogate dominion undeferv'd
 Over his brethren, and quite dispossess
 Concord and law of nature from the earth,
 Hunting (and men, not beasts, shall be his game) 30
 With war and hostile snare such as refuse
 Subjection to his empire tyrannous :
 A mighty hunter thence he shall be styl'd
 Before the LORD, as in despite of Heav'n,
 Or from Heav'n claiming second sov'reignty ; 35
 And from rebellion shall derive his name,
 Though of rebellion others he accuse
 He with a crew, whom like ambition joins
 With him, or under him to tyrannize,
 Marching from Eden tow'ards the west, shall find 40
 The plain wherein a black bituminous gurge
 Boils out from under ground, the mouth of hell :
 Of brick, and of that stuff, they cast to build
 A city' and tow'r, whose top may reach to Heav'n ;
 And get themselves a name ; lest far dispers'd 45
 In foreign lands, their memory be lost,
 Regardless whether good or evil fame :
 But GOD, who oft descends to visit men
 Unseen, and through their habitations walks
 To mark their doings, them beholding soon, 50
 Comes down to see their city, ere the tow'r
 Obstruct Heav'n tow'rs, and in derision sets
 Upon their tongues a various sp'rit, to raze
 Quite out their native language, and instead
 To sow a jangling noise of words unknown, 55
 Forthwith a hideous gabble rises loud,
 Among the build:rs each to others call
 Not understood till hoarse. and all in rage

As mock'd they storm; great laughter was in Heav'n
 And looking down, to see the hubbub strange, 60
 And hear the din; thus was the building left
 Ridiculous, and the work confusion nam'd.

Whereto thus Adam fatherly displeas'd.

O execrable son so to aspire

Above his brethren, to himself assuming 65

Authority usurp'd from God, not giv'n:

He gave us only over beast, fish, fowl,

Dominion absolute; that right we hold

By his donation: but man over men

He made not lord; such title to himself 70

Reserving, human left from human free.

But this usurper his encroachment proud

Stays not on man; to God his tow'r intends

Siege and defiance. Wretched man! what food

Will he convey up hither to sustain 75

Himself and his rash army, where thin air

Above the clouds will pine his entrails gross,

And famish him of breath, if not of bread?

To whom thus Michael. Justly thou abhorr'st

That son, who on the quiet state of men 80

Such trouble brought, affecting to subdue

Rational liberty: yet know withal,

Since thy original lapse, true liberty

Is lost, which always with right reason dwells

Twinn'd, and from her hath no dividual being: 85

Reason in man obscur'd, or not obey'd,

Immediately inordinate desires

And upstart passions catch the government

From reason, and to servitude reduce

Man till then free. Therefore, since he permits 90

Within himself unworthy pow'rs to reign

Over free reason, God, in judgement just,

Subjects him from without to violent lords;

Who oft as undeservedly intral

His outward freedom: tyranny must be, 95

Though to the tyrant thereby no excuse.

Yet sometimes nations will decline so low

From virtue, which is reason, that no wrong,

But justice, and some fatal curse annex'd,

Deprives them of their outward liberty, 100
 Their inward lost: witness th' irreverent son
 Of him who built the ark, who, for the shame
 Done to his father, heard this heavy curse,
Servant of servants, on his vicious race.
 Thus will this latter, as the former world, 105
 Still tend from bad to worse, till God at last,
 Wearied with their iniquities, withdraw
 His presence from among them, and avert
 His holy eyes, resolving from thenceforth
 To leave them to their own polluted ways; 110
 And one peculiar nation to select
 From all the rest, of whom to be invoc'd,
 A nation from one faithful man to spring:
 Him on this side Euphrates yet residing,
 Bred up in idol-worship: O that man 115
 (Canst thou believe?) should be so stupid grown,
 While yet the patriarch liv'd, who 'scap'd the flood,
 As to forsake the living God, and fall
 To worship their own work in wood and stone
 For gods! yet him God the Most High vouchsafes 120
 To call by vision from his Father's house,
 His kindred and false gods, into a land
 Which he will shew him, and from him will raise
 A mighty nation, and upon him show'r
 His benediction so, that in his seed 125
 All nations shall be bless'd; he straight obeys,
 Not knowing to what land, yet firm believes.
 I see him, but thou canst not, with what faith
 He leaves his gods, his friends, and native soil
 Ur of Chaldæa, passing now the ford 130
 To Haran, after him a cumbrous train
 Of herds and flocks, and numerous servitude;
 Not wand'ring, poor; but trusting all his wealth
 With God, who call'd him, in a land unknown.
 Canaan he now attains; I see his tents 135
 Pitch'd about Sechem and the neighbouring plain
 Of Moreh; there by promise he receives
 Gift to his progeny of all that land,
 From Hamath northward to the desert south,
 (Things by their names I call, though yet unnam'd)

From Hermon east to the great western sea ; 141
 Mount Hermon, yonder sea, each place behold
 In prospect, as I point them ; on the shore
 Mount Carmel ; here the double founted stream,
 Jordan, true limit eastward ; but his sons 145
 Shall dwell to Senir, that long ridge of hills.
 'Tis ponder, that all nations of the earth
 Shall in his seed be blessed : by that seed
 Is meant thy great deliverer, who shall bruise
 The serpent's head ; whereof to thee anon 150
 Plainlier shall be reveal'd. This patriarch blest'd,
 Whom faithful Abraham due time shall call,
 A son, and of his son a grandchild leaves,
 Like him in faith, in wisdom, and renown.
 The grandchild with twelve sons increas'd, departs 155
 From Canaan, to a land hereafter call'd
 Egypt, divided by the river Nile :
 See where it flows, disgorging at sev'n mouths
 Into the sea. To sojourn in that land
 He comes, invited by a younger son 160
 In time of dearth ; a son whose worthy deeds
 Raise him to be the second in that realm
 Of Pharaoh ; there he dies, and leaves his race
 Growing into a nation, and now grown
 Suspected to a sequent king, who seeks 165
 To stop their overgrowth, as inmate guests
 Too num'rous ; whence of guests he makes them slaves
 Inhospitably, and kills their infant-males ;
 Till by two brethren (those two brethren call
 Moses and Aaron) sent from God to claim 170
 His people from intralment, they return
 With glory' and spoil back to their promis'd land.
 But first the lawless tyrant, who denies
 To know their God, or message to regard
 Must be compell'd by signs and judgements dire ; 175
 'To blood unshed the rivers must be turn'd ;
 Frogs, lice, and flies, must all his palace fill
 With loath'd intrusion, and fill all the land ;
 His cattle must of rot and murrain die ;
 Botches and blains must all his flesh imbosc 180
 And all his people ; thunder mix'd with hail,

Hail mix'd with fire, must rend th' Egyptian sky,
 And wheel on th' earth, devouring where it rolls;
 What it devours not, herb, or fruit, or grain,
 A darksome cloud of locusts swarming down 185
 Must eat, and on the ground leave nothing green;
 Darknes must overshadow all his bounds,
 Palpable darknes; and blot out three days;
 Last, with one midnight-stroke, all the first born
 Of Egypt must lie dead. Thus with ten wounds 190
 The river-dragon tam'd at length submits
 To let his sojourners depart, and oft
 Humbles his stubborn heart; but still as ice
 More harden'd after thaw; till in his rage
 Pursuing whom he late dismiss'd, the sea 195
 Swallows him with his host; but them lets pass
 As on dry land between two crystal walls,
 Aw'd by the rod of Moses so to stand
 Divided, till his rescu'd gain their shore;
 Such wond'rous pow'r God to his saint will lend, 200
 Though present in his Angel, who shall go
 Before them in a cloud, and pill'ar of fire,
 By day a cloud, by night a pill'ar of fire,
 To guide them in their journey, and remové
 Behind them, while th' obdurate king pursues: 205
 All night he will pursue; but his approach
 Darknes defends between till morning watch;
 Then through the fiery pillar and the cloud
 God looking forth will trouble all his host,
 And craze their chariot-wheels; when by command
 Moses once more his potent rod extends 211
 Over the sea; the sea his rod obeys;
 On their embattled ranks the waves return,
 And overwhelm their war. The race elect
 Safe towards Canaan, from the shore advance 215
 Through the wild desert, not the readiest way,
 Lest ent'ring on the Canaanite alarm'd,
 War terrify them; inexpert, and fear
 Return them back to Egypt, chusing rather
 Inglorious life with servitude; for life 220
 To noble and ignoble is more sweet
 Untrain'd in arms, where rashness lead not on.

This also shall they gain by their delay
 In the wild wilderneis ; there they shall found
 Their government, and their great senate chuse 225
 Through the twelve tribes, to rule by laws ordain'd.
 God from the mount of Sinai, whose grey top
 Shall tremble, he descending, will himself
 In thunder, lightning, and loud trumpets sound,
 Ordain them laws ; part such as appertain 230
 To civil justice, part religious rites
 Of sacrifice, informing them, by types
 And shadows of that destin'd seed to bruise
 The serpent, by what means he shall atchieve
 Mankind's deliv'rance. But the voice of GOD 235
 To mortal ear is dreadful ; they beseech
 That Moses might report to them his will,
 And terror cease ; he grants what they besought,
 Instructed that to GOD is no access
 Without Mediator, whose high office now 240
 Moses in figure bears, to introduce
 One greater, of whose day he shall foretel,
 And all the prophets in their age the times
 Of great Messiah shall sing. Thus laws and rites
 Establish'd, such delight hath GOD in men 245
 Obedient to his will, that he vouchsafes
 Among them to set up his tabernacle,
 The holy One with mortal men to dwell.
 By his prescript a sanctuary is fram'd
 Of cedar, overlaid with gold ; therein 250
 An ark, and in the ark his testimony,
 The records of his cov'nant ; over these
 A mercy-seat of gold between the wings
 Of two bright cherubim ; before him burn
 Sev'n lamps, as in a zodiac representing 255
 The heav'nly fires ; over the tent a cloud
 Shall rest by day, a fiery gleam by night,
 Sive when they journey, and at length they come,
 Conducted by his Angel, to the land
 Promis'd to Abraham and his seed. The rest 260
 Were long to tell, how many battles fought,
 How many kings destroy'd, and kingdoms won ;
 Or how the sun shall in mid Heav'n stand still

A day entire, and night's due course adjourn,
 Man's voice commanding, sun in Gibeon stand 265
 And thou moon in the vale of Ajalon,
 Till Isr'el overcome: so call the third
 From Abraham, son of Isaac, and from him
 His whole descent, who thus shall Canaan win.

Here Adam interpos'd. O sent from Heav'n, 270
 Enlight'ner of my darkness, gracious things
 Thou hast reveal'd, those chiefly which concern
 Just Abraham and his seed: now first I find
 Mine eyes true op'ning, and my heart much eas'd,
 Erewhile perplex'd with thoughts what would become
 Of me and all mankind; but now I see 276
 His day, in whom all nations shall be blest'd,
 Favour unmerited by me, who sought
 Forbidden knowledge by forbidden means.

This yet I apprehend not, why to those 280
 Among whom God will deign to dwell on earth,
 So many and so various laws are giv'n;
 So many laws argue so many sins
 Among them; how can God with such reside?

To whom thus Michael. Doubt not but that sin 285
 Will reign among them, as of thee begot;
 And therefore was law giv'n them to evince
 Their natural pravity, by stirring up
 Sin against law to fight: that when they see
 Law can discover sin, but not remove, 290

Save by those shadowy expiations weak,
 The blood of bulls and goats, they may conclude
 Some blood more precious must be paid for man,
 Just for unjust; that in such righteousness
 To them by faith imputed, they may find 295
 Justification towards God, and peace

Of conscience; which the law by ceremonies
 Cannot appease, nor man the moral part
 Perform, and not performing cannot live.
 So law appears imperfect, and but given 300
 With purpose to resign them in full time
 Up to a better covenant, disciplin'd
 From shadowy types to truth, from flesh to spirit,
 From composition of strict laws to free

Acceptance of large grace, from servile fear 305
 To filial, works of law to works of faith.
 And therefore shall not Moses, though of God
 Highly belov'd, being but the Minister
 Of law, his people into Canaan lead ;
 But Joshua, whom the Gentiles Jesus call, 310
 His name and office bearing, who shall quell
 The adversary serpent, and bring back
 Through the world's wilderness long wander'd man
 Safe to eternal Paradise of rest.
 Mean while they in their earthly Canaan plac'd, 315
 Long time shall dwell and prosper ; but when sins
 National interrupt their public peace,
 Provoking God to raise them enemies ;
 From whom as oft he saves them penitent
 By judges first, then under kings ; of whom 320
 The second, both for piety renown'd
 And puissant deeds, a promise shall receive
 Irrevocable, that his regal throne
 For ever shall endure ; the like shall sing
 All prophecy, that of the royal stock 325
 Of David (so I name this king) shall rise
 A Son, the woman's seed to thee foretold,
 Foretold to Abraham, and in whom shall trust
 All nations, and to kings foretold, of kings
 The last ; for of his reign shall be no end. 330
 But first a long succession must ensue ;
 And his next son, for wealth and wisdom fam'd,
 The clouded ark of God, till then in tents
 Wand'ring, shall in a glorious temple' inshrine.
 Such follow him as shall be register'd, 335
 Part good, part bad, of bad the longer scroll ;
 Whose foul idolatries and other faults
 Heap'd to the popular sum, will so incense
 God, as to leave them, and expose their land,
 Their city', his temple, and his holy ark, 340
 With all his sacred things, a scorn and prey
 To that proud city, whose high walls thou saw'st
 Left in confusion, Babylon thence call'd.
 There in captivity he lets them dwell
 The space of sev'nty years, then brings them back, 345

Rememb'ring mercy, and his cov'nant sworn
 To David, 'stablish'd as the days of Heav'n.
 Return'd from Babylon by leave of kings
 Their lords, whom God dispos'd, the house of God
 They first re-edify, and for a while 350
 In mean estate live moderate, till grown
 In wealth and multitude, factious they grow;
 But first among the priests dissension springs,
 Men who attend the altar, and should most
 Endeavour peace: their strife pollution brings 355
 Upon the temple itself: at last they seize
 The sceptre, and regard not David's ions;
 Then lose it to a stranger, that the true
 Anointed king Messiah might be born
 Barr'd of his right; yet at his birth a star, 360
 Unseen before in heav'n, proclaims him come,
 And guides the eastern sages, who inquire
 His place to offer incense, myrrh, and gold:
 His place of birth a solemn Angel tells
 To simple shepherds, keeping watch by night; 365
 They gladly thither haste, and by a quire
 Of quadron'd Angels hear his carol sung.
 A virgin is his mother, but his sire
 The pow'r of the Most High; he shall ascend
 The throne hereditary, and bound his reign 370
 With earth's wide bounds, his glory with the Heav'ns.
 He ceas'd, discerning Adam with such joy
 Surcharg'd, as had like grief been dew'd in tears,
 Without the vent of words, which these he breath'd.
 O prophet of glad tidings, finisher 375
 Of utmost hope! now clear I understand
 What oft my steadiest thoughts have search'd in vain;
 Why our great expectation should be call'd
 The seed of woman: Virgin mother hail!
 High in the love of Heav'n; yet from my loins 380
 Thou shalt proceed, and from thy womb the Son
 Of God most high; so God with man unites.
 Needs must the serpent now his capital bruise
 Expect with mortal pain: say, where and when. 384
 Their fight, what stroke shall bruise the victor's heel?
 To whom thus Michael. Dream not of their fight,

As of a duel, or the local wounds
 Of head or heel: not therefore joins the Son
 Manhead to Godhead, with more strength to foil
 Thy enemy: nor so is overcome 390
 Satan, whose fall from Heav'n, a deadlier bruise,
 Disabled not to give thee thy death's wound:
 Which he, who comes thy Saviour, shall recure,
 Not by destroying Satan, but his works
 In thee and in thy seed: nor can this be, 395
 But by fulfilling that which thou did'st want,
 Obedience to the law of God, impos'd
 On penalty of death, and suff'ring death,
 The penalty to thy transgression due,
 And due to theirs which out of thine will grow: 400
 So only can high justice rest appaid
 The law of God exact he shall fulfil
 Both by obedience and by love, though love
 Alone fulfil the law; thy punishment
 He shall endure by coming in the flesh 405
 To a reproachful life and cursed death,
 Proclaiming life to all who shall believe
 In his redemption, and that his obedience
 Imputed becomes theirs by faith, his obedience
 To save them, not their own, though legal works. 410
 For this he shall live hated, be blasphem'd,
 Seiz'd on by force, judg'd, and to death condemn'd,
 A shameful and accurs'd; nail'd to the cross
 By his own nation; slain for bringing life;
 But to the cross he nails thy enemies, 415
 The law that is against thee, and the sins
 Of all mankind, with him there crucifi'd,
 Never to hurt them more who rightly trust
 In this satisfaction. So he dies,
 But soon revives; death over him no pow'r 420
 Shall long usurp; ere the third dawning light
 Return, the stars of morn shall see him rise
 Out of his grave, fresh as the dawning light,
 Thy ransom paid, which man from death redeems,
 His death for man, as many as offer'd live 425
 Neglect not, and the benefit embrace
 By faith not void of works. This God-like act

Annuls thy doom, the death thou should'st have dy'd,
 In sin for ever lost from life; this act
 Shall bruise the head of Satan, crush his strength, 430
 Defeating Sin and Death, his two main arms;
 And fix far deeper in his head their stings,
 Than temp'ral death shall bruise the victor's heel,
 Or theirs whom he redeems, a death like sleep,
 A gentle wafting to immortal life; 435
 Nor after resurrection shall he stay
 Longer on earth than certain times t' appear
 To his disciples, men who in his life
 Still follow'd him; to them shall leave in charge
 To teach all nations what of him they learn'd, 440
 And his salvation them who shall believe
 Baptizing in the profluent stream, the sign
 Of washing them from guilt of sin to life
 Pure, and in mind prepar'd, if so befall,
 For death, like that which the Redeemer dy'd, 445
 All nations they shall teach: for from that day
 Not only to the sons of Abraham's loins
 Salvation shall be preach'd, but to the sons
 Of Abraham's faith wherever through the world;
 So in his seed all nations shall be bleis'd. 450
 Then to the Heav'n of Heav'ns he shall ascend
 With victory, triumphing through the air
 Over his foes and thine; there shall surprize
 The serpent, prince of air, and drag in chains
 Through all his realm, and there confounded leave;
 Then enter into glory, and resume 456
 His seat at God's right hand, exalted high
 Above all names in Heav'n; and thence shall come,
 When this world's dissolution shall be ripe,
 With glory and pow'r to judge both quick and dead;
 To judge th' unfaithful dead, but to reward 461
 His faithful, and receive them into bliss,
 Whether in Heav'n or Earth; for then the earth
 Shall all be Paradise, far happier place
 Than this of Eden, and far happier days. 465
 So spake th' Arch-angel Michael, then paus'd;
 As at the world's great period; and our fire,
 Replete with joy and wonder, thus reply'd.

O goodness infinite, Goodness immense!
 That all this good of evil shall produce, 470
 And evil turn to good; more wonderful
 Than that which by creation first brought forth
 Light out of darkness! Full of doubt I stand,
 Whether I should repent me now of sin
 By me done and occasion'd, or rejoice 475
 Much more, that much more good thereof shall spring;
 'To God more glory, more good-will to men
 From God, and over wrath grace shall abound;
 But say, if our Deliv'rer up to Heav'n
 Must reascend, what will betide the few 480
 His faithful, left among th' unfaithful herd,
 The enemies of truth? who then shall guide
 His people, who defend? will they not deal
 Worse with his foll'wers than with him they dealt?
 Be sure they will, said th' Angel; but from Heav'n
 He to his own a Comforter will send, 486
 The promise of the Father, who shall dwell
 His Sp'rit within them, and the law of faith
 Working through love, upon their hearts shall write,
 To guide them in all truth, and also arm 490
 With spiritual armour, able to resist
 Satan's assaults; and quench his fiery darts,
 What man can do against them, not afraid,
 Though to the death against such cruelties
 With inward consolation recompens'd, 495
 And oft supported so as shall amaze
 Their proudest persecutors: for the Spirit
 Pour'd first on his Apostles, whom he sends
 T' evangelize the nations, then on all
 Baptiz'd, shall them with wond'rous gifts endue, 500
 'To speak all tongues, and do all miracles,
 As did their LORD before them. Thus they win
 Great numbers of each nation to receive
 With joy the tidings brought from Heav'n: at length,
 Their ministry perform'd, and race well run, 505
 Their doctrine and their story written left,
 They die. But in their room, as they forewarn,
 Wolves shall succeed for teachers, grievous wolves,
 Who all the sacred mysteries of Heav'n

To their own vile advantages shall turn 510
 Of lucre and ambition, and the truth
 With superstitions and traditions tainted,
 Left only in those written records pure,
 Though not but by the Spirit understood.
 Then shall they seek t' avail themselves of names, 515
 Places, and titles, and with these to join
 Secular pow'r, though feigning skill to act
 By spiritual, to themselves appropriating
 The Sp'rit of God, promis'd alike and given
 To all believers; and from that pretence 520
 Sp'ritual laws by carnal pow'r shall force
 On ev'ry conscience; laws which none shall find
 Left them inrol'd, or what the Sp'rit within
 Shall on the heart engrave. What will they then
 But force the Sp'rit of grace itself, and bind 525
 His consort liberty? what but unbuild
 His living temples, but built by faith to stand,
 Their own faith not another's? for on earth
 Who against faith and conscience can be heard
 Infalible? yet many will presume: 530
 Whence heavy persecution shall arise
 On all who in the worship persevere
 Of sp'rit and truth; the rest, far greater part,
 Will deem in outward rites and specious forms
 Religion satisfy'd; truth shall retire 535
 Bestuck with slanderous darts, and works of faith
 Rarely be found: so shall the world go on,
 To good malignant, to bad men benign,
 Under her own weight groaning, till the day
 Appear of respiration to the just, 540
 And vengeance to the wicked, at return
 Of him so lately promis'd to thy aid,
 The woman's seed, obscurely then foretold,
 Now amplier known thy Saviour and thy LORD,
 Last in the clouds from Heav'n to be reveal'd 545
 In glory of the Father, to dissolve
 Satan with his perverted world, then raise
 From the conflagrant mass purg'd and refin'd,
 New Heav'ns, new earth, ages of endless date
 Founded in righteousness, and peace, and love, 550

To bring forth fruits, joy and eternal bliss.
 He ended; and thus Adam last reply'd.
 How soon hath thy prediction, Seer blest'd,
 Measur'd this transient world, the race of time,
 Till time stand fix'd? Beyond is all abyss 555
 Eternity, whose end no eye can reach;
 Greatly instructed I shall hence depart, -
 Greatly in peace of thought, and have my fill
 Of knowledge, what this vessel can contain;
 Beyond which was my folly to aspire. 560
 Henceforth I learn, that to obey is best,
 And love with fear the only God, to walk
 As in his presence, ever to observe
 His providence, and on him sole depend,
 Merciful over all his works, with good 565
 Still overcoming evil, and by small
 Accomplishing great things, by things deem'd weak
 Subverting worldly strong and worldly wise
 By simply meek; that suff'ring for truth's sake
 Is fortitude to highest victory, 570
 And to the faithful, death the gate of life;
 'Taught this by his example whom I now
 Acknowledge my Redeemer ever blest'd.
 To whom thus also th' Angel last reply'd,
 This having learn'd, thou hast attain'd, the sum 575
 Of wisdom; hope no high'er, though all the stars
 Thou know'st by name, and all th' ethereal pow'rs,
 All secrets of the deep, all Nature's works,
 Or works of God in Heav'n, air, earth, or sea,
 And all the riches of this world enjoy'd'st, 580
 And all the rule, one empire; only add
 Deeds to thy knowledge answerable, add faith,
 Add virtue, patience, temperance, add love,
 By name to come call'd charity, the soul
 Of all the rest: then wilt thou not be loath 585
 To leave this Paradise, but shalt possess
 A Paradise within thee, happier far;
 Let us descend now therefore from this top
 Of speculation; for the hour precise
 Exacts our parting hence; and see the guards, 590
 By me incamp'd on yonder hill, expect

Their motion, at whose front a flaming sword,
 In signal of remove, wave fiercely round ;
 We may no longer stay : go, waken Eve :
 Her also I with gentle dreams have calm'd 595
 Portending good, and all her sp'rits compos'd
 To meek submission : thou at season fit
 Let her with thee partake what thou hast heard,
 Chiefly what may concern her faith to know,
 The great deliv'rance by her seed to come 600
 (For by the woman's seed) on all mankind :
 That ye may live, which will be many days,
 Both in one faith unanimous though sad,
 With cause for evils past, yet much more cheer'd
 With meditation on the happy end. 605
 He ended ; and they both descend the hill ;
 Descended, Adam to the bow'r where Eve
 Lay sleeping ran before, but found her wak'd ;
 And thus with words not sad she him receiv'd.
 Whence thou return'st, and whither went'st, I know ;
 For God is also' in sleep, and dreams advise, 611
 Which he hath sent propitious some great good
 Prefaging, since with sorrow' and heart's distress
 Wearied I fell asleep ; but now lead on ;
 In me is no delay ; with thee to go, 615
 Is to stay here ; without thee here to stay,
 Is to go hence unwilling ; thou to me
 Art all things under Heav'n, all places thou,
 Who for my wilful crime art banish'd hence.
 This further consolation yet secure 620
 I carry hence ; though all by me is lost,
 Such favour I unworthy am vouchsaf'd,
 By me the promis'd seed shall all restore.
 So spake our mother Eve ; and Adam heard
 Well pleas'd, but answer'd not ; for now too nigh 625
 Th' Arch-angel stood, and from the other hill
 To their fix'd station, all in bright array,
 The Cherubim descended ; on the ground
 Gliding meteorous, as ev'ning-mist
 Ris'n from a river o'er the marsh glides, 630
 And gathers ground fast at the lab'rer's heel

Homeward returning. High in front advanc'd,
 The brandish'd sword of Gon before them blaz'd
 Fierce as a comet ; which with torrid heat,
 And vapour as the Lybian air adust, 635
 Began to parch that temp'rate clime ; whereat
 In either hand the haft'ning Angel caught
 Our ling'ring parents, and to th' eastern gate
 Led them direct, and down the cliff as fast
 To the subjected plain ; then disappear'd. 640
 Then looking back, all th' eastern side beheld
 Of Paradise, so late their happy seat,
 Wav'd over by that flaming brand, the gate
 With dreadful faces throng'd and fiery arms :
 Some natural tears they dropt, but wip'd them soon ;
 The world was all before them, where to choose 646
 Their place of rest, and Providence their guide :
 They hand in hand, with wand'ring steps and slow,
 Through Eden took their solitary way.

F I N I S.









